REYNOLDS HISTORICAL
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 1833 01729 3702

GENEALOGY
975.4
W52942
1902

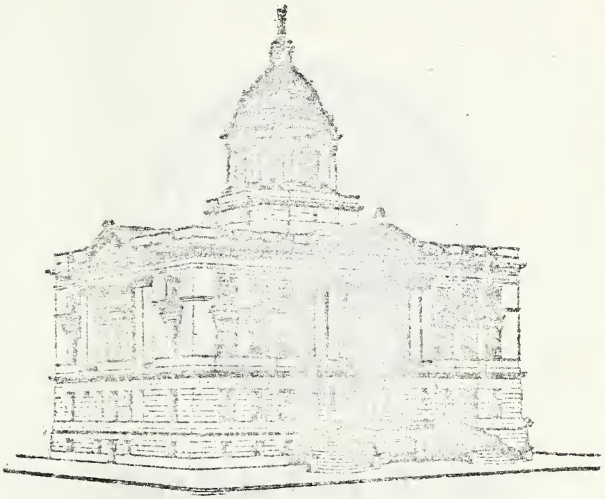
Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2013

http://archive.org/details/westvirginiahist02west

VOL. 2. JANUARY, 1902. NO. 1.

The West Virginia Historical Magazine

Quarterly.



(ROOMS OF THE WEST VIRGINIA HISTORICAL SOCIETY.)

CHARLESTON, W. VA.

Published by the West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society.

DR. J. P. HALE, President of the Society.
W. S. LAIDLEY, Editor,

Subscriptions, per year, - - - - - $1.00
Single Copies - - - - - - - - - .25

For Advertising, enquire of the Editor.

Vol. 2. JANUARY, 1902. No. 1.

The West Virginia Historical Magazine Quarterly,

I 705617

CHARLESTON, W. VA.

Published by the West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society.

J. P. HALE, President of the Society.
W. S. LAIDLEY, Editor.

SUBSCRIPTIONS, per year, - - - - - - - - - $1.00
SINGLE COPIES, - - - - - - - - - - - .25
For Advertising, enquire of the Editor.

THE TRIBUNE COMPANY, PRINTERS,
CHARLESTON, W. VA.

CONTENTS OF JANUARY, 1902, NUMBER.

Greeting.
Augusta County Court.
Fairfax Stone, by Dr. J. L. Miller.
Battle of Point Pleasant.
Isaac Williams, by A. F. Gibbons.
David Ruffner, by Dr. W. H. Ruffner.
Philip Doddridge, by W. S. Laidley.
Henry McWhorter, by L. V. McWhorter.
Round Bottom, Marshall County, by W. B. Mathews.
Book Notices.
Misprints in October Number.
Contents of Former Numbers.

GREETING.

With this number of the West Virginia Historical Magazine, we assume the responsibility of its contents.

The resignation of Dr. John P. Hale as its Editor, appeared in the last October number and the Board regretted much to accept the same, but the reasons assigned for the resignation (considerations of age and health) were such as would not permit any discussion of the propriety thereof, and the said Board then assumed the responsibility of the selection of his successor.

We have no promises to make and no apologies to offer.

Our purpose shall be to collect, publish and preserve facts, incidents, and traditions, of and concerning matters and things that will in some way, more or less, relate to the history and biography of the people who have had something to do with the territory known now as the State of West Virginia.

Our wish will be to teach the people of West Virginia the history of her domain and its inhabitants, and should like to make the Magazine of such a character, that they would not only read it, but be taught thereby, but it is not our purpose to make it a branch of the kindergarten, or the Free School department of the State.

We extend the invitation heretofore given, to all persons, to write and send us what they may know or have heard of such things as would properly appertain to such a publication, and we would much like to secure an assistant in each county in the State, and as many contributors as possible.

The Executive Board of the Historical Society of the State of West Virginia, has control of this Magazine, and in the exercise of that control has limited us in the use of pictures therefor, and also in the number of pages, because the Legislature has limited them in the "Provisions of the Bill," and we regret to say that we cannot tell who has placed the limit on the Legislature, or who can remove it.

We should like to see the magazine one worthy of the State, and have the Historical Society, as an institution of the State, to take rank among the best in the land.

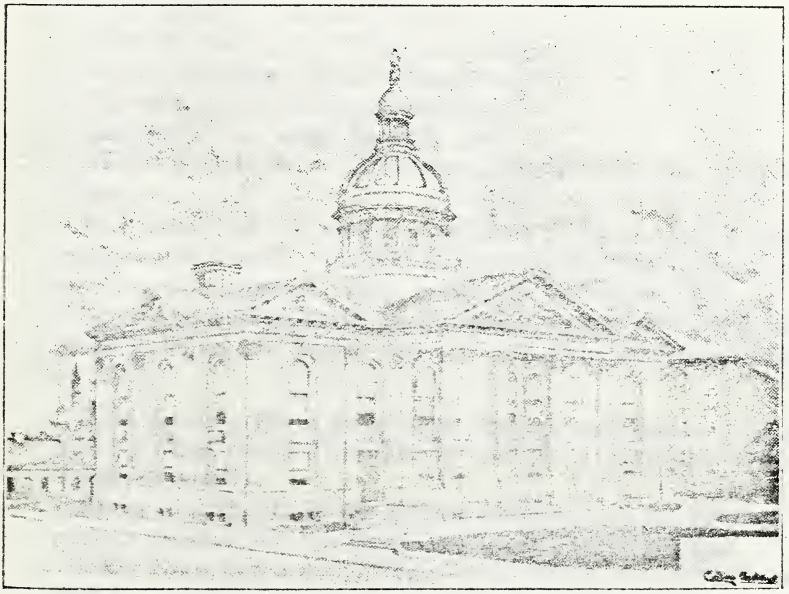
W. S. LAIDLEY.

The West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society.

AUGUSTA COUNTY COURT, 1745.

By W. S. Laidley.

We take pleasure in presenting a picture of the new Court House of this old county, which we are permitted to do, through the courtesy of the publishers of the Staunton paper, "Daily News".



This building was formally transferred by the contractors to the county officials Nov. 10, 1901, and it stands on the lot on which its predecessors stood, and the cost thereof complete was $55,272.32.

This is the fifth Court House that has been erected in this County, the several dates thereof are, 1745, 1755, 1798, 1836, 1901.

Augusta County was formed in 1738, but was not organized until 1745. And when formed, composed half of the Valley and all west of the Allegheny mountains from the lakes to the Mississippi river.

West Augusta District was laid off taking in all west of the mountains. It was rather indefinite in boundary as well as jurisdiction, as it was not a county, yet it had representation in House of Burgesses.

Nevertheless, the first Court, held in the first Court House, had jurisdiction over a large part of what is now West Virginia, and that is enough for us to manifest an interest in the prosperity of the ancient shire, and rejoice with the people in the possession of such a handsome and complete temple of justice, as now graces the city of Staunton.

The first Court held in this County was held Dec. 9, 1745, and the names of the County officials were:

John Lewis, Presiding Justice.
Gabriel Jones, the King's Attorney.
James Madison, Clerk of the Court.
Thomas Lewis, Colonial Surveyor.
James Patton, High Sheriff; and
William Beverly was the donor of the site for the Court House.

The first Court House is described by Capt. James Baumgardner, who said: "Picture in your minds, the typical country log school-house, add some ten or twelve feet to its length, and half as many to its width, knock out the window glass, tear up the floors, and you will have the Court House of 1745.

John Lewis.—There have been various opinions as to when and by what route John Lewis and his attendants reached Augusta county.

If the record left by his wife is reliable, and we know of no reason to question the same, we learn the following:

That John Lewis was a Huguenot, that he lived in Ireland, and he went to Scotland and married Margaret Lynn and took her to Ireland, where his mother resided, and where he had accumulated quite an estate, part of which was a Leasehold. In 1730, Lord Clanwithgairn decided to get rid of this lease and failing in Court, he attacked Lewis with armed men, and Lewis defended and there were several killed. Lewis left the country and went to Portugal, and there he determined to go to America, and he made his way back to his wife se-

cretly, and she took the family and attendants, and sailed for the colonies.

She wrote "that she was delighted to hear John Salling tell at Williamsburg when first we came to this country and John was taken with his account of the land, &c." John Lewis and his tenants erected about thirty cabins where Staunton now is, and afterwards erected Lewis Fort, near there. We therefore conclude that he went from Williamsburg up the James and found his way to the New settlement. Thomas, Andrew, William and Alice were born in Ireland.

From what is written by Mrs. Lewis, we conclude also that the family were Episcopalians, and Lewis was the pioneer of the settlement.

Gabriel Jones, the King's Attorney, known throughout the Valley as the "Great Valley Lawyer," was born near Williamsburg, in 1794; was sent to England to school where he prepared himself for the Bar, and settled first in Frederick and practiced in all the Valley counties until his death in 1806, and his grave is on the Shenandoah in Rockingham county. We promise our readers a fuller sketch of this interesting character hereafter.

Thomas Lewis, was a son of John Lewis; he married Miss Strother, a sister of the wife of Gabriel Jones, and a sister of the wife of John Madison, the father of Bishop Madison. Thomas was a member of the House of Burgesses, and afterwards of the Virginia Conventions and was a surveyor, and was on the Commission to settle the Virginia and Pennsylvania line. One of his sons, Benjamin Lewis, married Margaret Hite, and one of their daughters, Mrs. Louise S. Major, now over ninety years of age, resides in Waverly, Mo.

This is not the Thomas Lewis that settled at Point Pleasant.

James Madison, the Clerk of the Court, was the father of Bishop Madison, and his wife was a Miss Strother, sister to the wife of Thomas Lewis, and also of the wife of Gabriel Jones.

James Patton, the High Sheriff. Of him it is said that he was a leader of men, and first on the list when men were called for duty—first in the military organization of the county and first on the Commissioners of Peace, first on the Board of Vestrymen and was appointed to treat with the Indians. He was killed in 1775, and left no son to keep alive the name, but through a daughter, he was the ancestor of Gov. Floyd.

He had a Patent for 100,000 acres of land in Augusta county dated April 26, 1745, located on the branches of the Mississippi river, known by the name of Wood river.

William Beverly, the donor of the land on which the Court House was located, was of the Virginia family and owned large tracts of land, and the gift for a site for a Court House was part of his land speculations.

The said officials were required to take an oath, which required their assent to the assertion that the Stuarts were Kings by Divine right, that absolute obedience to the royal will in all things temporal and spiritual was the duty of the subject, enjoined by the law of the land and the law of God, that the King at his pleasure might abrogate the statute laws of the realm and that the subject could and ought to be coerced by pains and penalties to accept the religious belief prescribed by his law.

This Court House of Augusta in 1745, was the headquarters of the advance post of civilization. All beyond this was savagery and barbarism. Its occupants were the pioneers, guarding the advance of the forces of law, order and civilization, and the Court, on taking its seat, assumed and asserted jurisdiction extending from Lake Superior on the north to the Mississippi on the west.

Capt. Baumgardner grows eloquent and says: "This is why the landless exiles from the province of Ulster hastened to these fair valleys and planted here the "Lily and the Rose," where at last after generations of effort and battle, of suffering and sacrifice, they achieved the supreme desire of their hearts, the establishmeent of "a Church without a Bishop and a State without a King."

It is proper to say that Mrs. Lewis writes, "Not only are we safe here but John Lewis stands clear before the world of the death of Lord Clanwithgairn. His Majesty has sent full and free pardon and generous grants of land in this Eden Valley of Virginia."

In 1737, Lewis went to Williamsburg and met Burden, who returned with him to Augusta, and they all went hunting and Burden was looking for choice lands. The Lewis boys had caught a young Buffalo calf and gave it to Burden and he took it to Williamsburg and gave it to Gov. Gooch, who was a personal friend of the father of Mrs. Lewis. Burden obtained a warrant to locate 500,000 thousand acres of land on the James and Shenandoah, and was to locate one hundred fami-

lies thereon in ten years. He went to work and brought from Scotland and North Ireland, and Mrs. Lewis said it sounded to her like the gathering of the clans to hear the names of these settlers, viz: McKees, McCues, McCampbells, McClungs, McKowns, Caruthers, Stuarts, Wallaces, Lyles, Paxtons, Prestons, and Grisbys. These were the people that had secured the desire of their hearts, "A church without a Bishop and a State without a King" for every member of the county court were of the Church that had Bishops, in England, if none in Virginia.

So much for our first Court and Court House, and first settlers.

THE FAIRFAX STONE.

In the dim-lit forest on a crest of the Alleghenies stands a monument, that a century and a half ago marked the westermost corner of one of the largest private estates in the world—an estate of nearly six million acres.

At present this stone designates a corner of the states of West Virginia and Maryland, as well as a corner of the counties of Grant, Tucker, and Preston, in the former state, and Garrett county in the latter. For nearly a century it was a 'stone of contention' between Maryland and Virginia, but that is another part of my story.

One bright day in September, when all the woods were green and yellow and crimson, it was my pleasure to visit this memorial of a day when kings paid their debts right royally with grants of millions of acres of land in the virgin forests of America.

In December, 1884, some unknown vandal destroyed this most interesting monument in the Virginias, so that now the visitor sees but a pile of its fragments resting upon the original base. All around you are thickets of laurel and rhododendron, or bay laurel, while overhead are the interlacing branches of the forest trees. Sloping away from the stone to the west and north is the bank of a little ravine, perhaps thirty or forty feet to the bottom, down which trickles the pure cold water from the fountain spring of the North Fork of the Potomac, or the "Cohongaronta" as it is named on an old map of 1787 in the possession of the writer. This ravine winds around to the north and east and widens into a little

valley, across which you catch a glimpse of the worn fields of a plantation in Maryland, at the lower slopes of "Backbone Mountain", or Alleghany Ridge as it is called on the old maps. The stone itself will be described later, but to get a clear understanding of its history we must go back a century before its foundation was laid, to the beginning of the "Northern Neck" of Virginia.

FAIRFAX STONE.

In 1649, the fugitive King, Charles II., granted to Ralph Lord Hopton, John Lord Culpepper, Henry Earl of St. Albans, Sir Thomas Culpeper, Sir Dudley Wyatt, and others all the land lying between the Potomac and Rappahannock Rivers, as a refuge for those cavalier followers of his father, who must flee from England. During the reign of Cromwell the grant remained without force. In 1662 King Charles re-

newed the patent, but the opposition of the Virginia people and governor was so strong that the agents of the patentees could not establish their authority. Both parties appealed to the king, who May 8, 1669, gave a new charter to the proprietors more odious than the first, because it required all persons that had grants from the governor, prior to September 20, 1661, to take them out again from the proprietors. This aroused a greater storm of indignation than before, and Thomas Ludwell, Secretary of the Colony wrote that "he had never seen anything so move the people's grief and pain or more stop their industry." Four years later, February 25, 1673, King Charles made bad matters worse by granting, not only the "Northern Neck", but also—"All that tract territory region and dominion of land and water commonly called *Virginia*, together with the territory of *Accomack* and all that part of the bay Chesapeake, that lyeth betweene the same, or any part thereof and all other the rights members jurisdictions and appurtenances thereof, situate lying and being in *America*, adjoining the Colony and dominion of *Maryland* towards the north, to the great ocean towards the east, to the colony and dominion commonly called *Carolina*, towards the South and are bounded towards the west by a line leading from the first spring of the great river commonly called *Patawomack* to the first spring of the river *Rappahanock*, and from thence to the first spring of the great river *Powhatan* otherwise called the *James River*, and from thence in a meridian line to the said colony or dominion called *Carolina*, etc., etc., ..." also all the lands lying west of the limits given as well as those west of Maryland and Carolina between 36 1-2 degrees and 40 degrees "northerne latitude to the great sea towards the west, etc., etc.,...." "Unto the said *Henry* Earl of Arlinton and Thomas Lord Culpeper, their executors, administrators and assigns from the tenth day of March last before the date hereof for and during and unto the next full end and terme of thirty one years." For this grant, which gave them temporary ownership and almost royal powers over a domain that included the greater portion of the present United States, though no one at that time realized how far west the "great sea" lay, the proprietors were to pay a yearly rental of forty shillings "upon the feast day of *St. Michael* the Arch Angel."

In October 1674 the indignant Virginians sent Secretary Thomas Ludwell, General Robert Smith, and Colonel Francis

Morryson to England to protest against this gross violation of their liberties. They were successful in their efforts, and the Lords Arlington and Culpeper agreed to surrender all the great powers conferred by the patent, only retaining their quit rents, which were to be paid in tobacco at the rate of three and one half pence per pound. Also Lord Hopton, the Earl of St. Albans, Sir Dudley Wyatt and their associates agreed to sell to the colony for four hundred pounds apiece their rights to the "Northern Neck" under the old patent of 1649. The new charter was drawn up and had gotten as far as the Hamper Office in 1676 when the news of Bacon's Rebellion squashed the whole thing. So the quarrel dragged on till July 25, 1684, Lord Culpeper, who had purchased the Earl of Arlington's interest on the 10th of September, 1681, sold the patent back to the king for an annuity of six hundred pounds for twenty years. Lord Culpeper then purchased the shares of the other proprietors of the Northern Neck; and September 27th, 1688, he was declared sole proprietor by a new patent.

Lord Culpeper has been described as a low minded, vicious man, who lived apart from his family and spent over sixty thousand pounds on his mistress, Susanna Willis, so that the House of Lords in 1690 had to take steps to protect his property for his wife and daughter.

Lord Culpeper died about this time, and with Leeds Castle and other Kentshire properties, the Northern Neck of Virginia passed to his widow and his only daughter, the Right Honorable Lady Catharine Culpeper, who about 1691 married the fifth Lord Fairfax of Denton, Yorkshire. After that the records appear in the names of Lady Culpeper and Lord Fairfax. Lord Fairfax died in 1710 and Lady Culpeper about a year later, so that from an old grant in my possession, dated July 30th, I notice that it appears in the name of "The Right Honorable Catharine Lady Fairfax Baroness Dowager of Cameron in Scotland. The only daughter and heir of Thomas late Lord and Marguritte late Lady Culpeper Dec'd. And Sole and only Proprietor of the Northern Neck of Virginia."

In 1722, at the age of thirty, Thomas the sixth Lord Fairfax succeeded his mother, and from that time on till 1780, when the last grant in the name of any proprietor was made, the patents appeared in his name. The proprietorship was not abolished till 1785, three years after the death of the old

Lord, in accordance with the laws confiscating the property of British aliens. November 15th, 1786, Patrick Henry, Governor of Virginia, assumed for the state all that great domain known as the Northern Neck, which for over a century had belonged to the Culpeper and Fairfax families.

One of the most picturesque figures that stand out prominently upon the canvass of Virginia's early history, is that of Thomas, sixth Lord Fairfax, Baron of Cameron, and proprietor of the Northern Neck in Virginia. He was over six feet tall, handsome, and had the Fairfax distingue inherited from a long line of soldier lords: he was born to a large fortune, had acquired the best culture of his day, and so was a man eminently fitted to take a prominent place in any society. He matriculated at Oriel College, Oxford, January 24, 1709-10, where he had a brilliant career. Later he became intimate with some of the greatest literary men of his time, such as Bolingbroke, Addison, and Steele, to whose paper, "The Spectator," he contributed several numbers.

To the person who likes to speculate upon what might have been, Lord Fairfax's life affords a fine opportunity; particularly as to what might have happened to the Northern Neck had not two great events in his life taken place. First of these was when his mother and grandmother Culpeper forced him to sign away the great estates that had been in his father's family for several centuries, in order to save the Culpeper properties, including the Northern Neck of Virginia, which were heavily mortgaged. This act cast a gloom over his life when he realized that he had sold the home that should have been his greatest pride, and also caused the second event to happen, which deepened his sadness. He was engaged to be married to a lady of fine family and fortune, who jilted him after the marriage bond had been signed and the guests invited, when she learned that he no longer owned the great Fairfax estates. Several years ago this musty old parchment was found by some children playing in the dusty garret of an old Virginia house; but with the consideration characteristic of his fine nature he had erased the lady's name, though he left his own. The first event caused him to retain possession of the Northern Neck, and the second one sent him to live in its wilds far away from the stately society in which he had been reared.

In 1739 he made his first visit to his Virginia estate where he remained but a short time. Returning to England he re-

linquished his rights to Leeds Castle in favor of his brother Robert, and then turned his back upon the land so dear to him, but ah, so full of bitter memories! It was in the year 1745 that he landed in Virginia never to leave it in the thirty six years that remained to him. At first he spent much time at Belvoir the home of his first cousin William Fairfax, who had settled on the Potomac near Mr. Vernon, the home of Laurence Washington, who later married his daughter, Anne

FAIRFAX HOUSE, ALEXANDRIA.

It was here that Lord Fairfax met the young George Washington and conceived for him the admiration and friendship that lasted all the rest of his life. It is undoubted that in the years that followed, the association of Lord Fairfax's finely cultured mind and noble character had a greater influence in the formation of Washington's character and life than that of any other man.

The Proprietor of the Northern Neck did not tarry long at Belvoir as the Virginia society reminded him too much of that in the home country, and he longed for solitude. In one of the choicest parts of the valley that takes its name from a river so beautiful that the Indians called it Shenandoah, "Daughter of the Stars", Lord Fairfax built him a house and

settled down with his dogs and guns, choice books, fine plate and rich mahogany furniture brought from his old home. To his manor he gave the name of Greenway Court, and it was his intention to later erect a house suitable to his station and wealth; but his designs were never carried out, and all the rest of his life was spent in the long low limestone building which had been erected as a steward's house.

It would be unjust to his memory to picture him as a recluse spending his time in gloomy brooding over his wrongs, for he was really a public spirited man, and took an active part in the regulation of affairs in his county. The house at Greenway Court was always open for the entertainment of friends or passing strangers no matter how humble their circumstances. From this inventory of his personal estate we see that besides the mahogany tables, chairs, desks, and dressing glasses there were twelve beds for the accommodation of those who cared to spend a night with the old Lord; that his dining room was furnished with china and glass sufficient for a large number to eat at one time and nearly twenty-six pounds of solid silver by actual weight; and with it ninety-seven negro servants to look after the comfort of guests and horses. This inventory also gives a catalogue of Lord Fairfax's library, which consisted of one hundred and thirty volumes, and is especially interesting because it was in these books that Washington did most of his early reading.

Doctor Burnaby, an Englishman who travelled in America before the Revolution, visited Lord Fairfax at Greenway Court in 1760; and after the death of the old Lord printed in the appendix to the third edition of his book the following kindly notice of his Lordship:

"Here Lord Fairfax built a small neat house, which he called Greenway Court, and laid out one of the most beautiful farms, consisting of arable and grazing lands, that had ever been seen in that quarter of the world. He lived there for the remainder of his life in the style of a gentleman farmer, or I should have said, of an English country gentleman. His dress corresponded with his mode of life, and, notwithstanding he had every year new suits of clothes of the most fashionable and expensive kind sent out from England to him, which he never put on, was plain in the extreme."

If I may be pardoned for interrupting the old doctor, I will add that his inventory calls for thirty-three waistcoats of

the finest damask, silk, and plush in bright colors as green, pink, blue, gold etc., with other articles of apparel in the same proportion and style, together with several pairs of very fine stock, knee, and shoe buckles. To resume the doctor's narrative:

LORD FAIRFAX.

"His manners were humble, modest and unaffected; not tinctured in the smallest degree with arrogance, pride or self-conceit. He was liberal almost to excess. The produce of his farms, after the deduction of what was necessary for the consumption of his own family, was given away to the poor planters and settlers in his neighborhood. To these he frequently advanced money to enable them to go on with their improvements, to clear away the woods and cultivate the ground. He was a friend and father to all who held and lived under him. Lord Fairfax had been brought up in revolutionary principles, and had early imbibed high notions of liberty, and of the excellence of the British Constitution. He presided at the county courts held at Winchester, where, during the session he always kept open table. So unexceptionable and disinterested was his behavior both public and private, and so generally was he beloved and respected, that

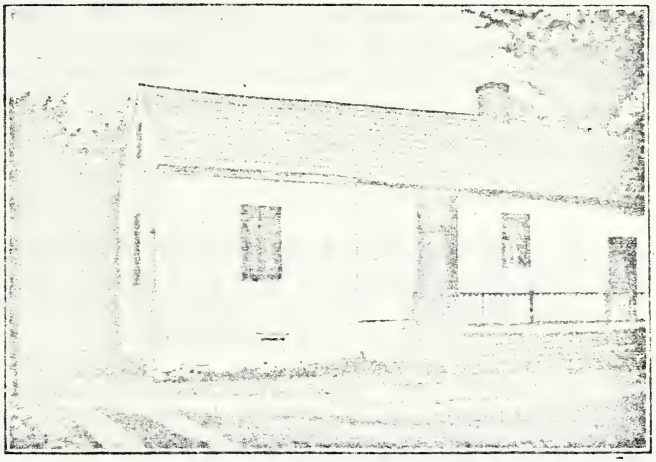
during the late contest between Great Britain and America, he never met with the least insult or molestation from either party. Lord Fairfax's early disappointment in love is thought to have excited in him a general dislike of the sex, in whose company, unless he was particularly acquainted with the parties, it is said he was reserved, and under evident constraint and embarrassment. But I was present when, upon a visit to Lieutenant-Governor Fauquier, who had arrived from England, he was introduced to his lady, and nothing of the kind appeared to justify the observation."

Lord Fairfax had been settled in Virginia for more than a year when the Fairfax Stone was placed in position. In 1733 he had petitioned the crown to appoint commissioners to determine the bounds of his patent. His request was granted, and the Commissioners began their journey from Fredericksburg in 1734 to the fountain spring of the Potomac, which they had decided was to be found at the head of the North Fork of the river. After a toilsome and adventurous trip, lasting several weeks, they reached this spot, and then returned to the tidewater country to make a map and report of the survey to be forwarded to the king. But he failed to approve their work until April, 1745, the year in which my Lord came to Virginia. A new set of commissioners were appointed to mark the western boundary of the estate, and on the 18th of September, 1746, they set out to the headwaters of the North Fork. Twenty-nine days later, October 17th, 1746, they placed the Fairfax Stone in position. It was constructed of four pieces of sandstone, forming a pyramid four feet and six inches in height. The base stone was sunk to a level with the surface, and on this was placed the other stones, two of them were each two feet in height, and the third six inches. The cutting was true and the joints were all cemented. The stone bore no date or inscription, excepting the letters "F X" upon each face of the middle stone.

From this time on Maryland steadily refused to admit that the head of the North Fork was the first spring of the Potomac, and Virginia as steadily refused to give up any of her territory; so that the question was not settled until 1852, when Maryland Assembly decided the matter by conceding to Virginia all her claims.

Washington was not a member of the surveying party that planted the stone that has taken so prominent a place in

Virginia and Maryland history, as he did not begin surveying for Lord Fairfax until 1747, which position he held till 1751. Lord Fairfax payed him for each day's work a doubloon and sometimes six pistoles (about twenty dollars.)



WASHINGTON'S OFFICE IN WINCHESTER WHILE LORD FAIRFAX'S SURVEYOR.

The little old stone office used by Washington when in Winchester is still standing on Braddock Street; as also is the old stone office at Greenway Court, about twelve miles out from that place. Years ago a typical old Virginia mansion was erected at Greenway Court, but the lower portion of the old limestone house was retained as a basement.

After the Revolution, Dr. Brian Martin Fairfax, to whom had descended the Fairfax title and estates, entered into litigation with the State of Virginia and others to recover his property in the Northern Neck. At last the disputes were arranged by the great Chief Justice Marshall, and finally settled by an act of the Virginia Assembly of December 10th, 1796. According to this act Dr. Fairfax executed deeds "extinguishing his title to the waste and unappropriated lands in the Northern Neck", and the State confirmed unto him all lands specifically set aside and "reserved by the late Thomas Lord Fairfax or his ancestors for his or their use". And so ended the proprietorship of the great Northern Neck of Virginia.

The States of West Virginia and Maryland have not done

their duty toward preserving the old Fairfax Stone, which is so closely linked to their history and boundary lines. Let not the historical and patriotic societies of these States be less recreant to their duty, but reclaim this interesting and valuable old relic by placing a new stone upon its foundation, and the fragments of the old one in some safe place; ere they crumble to dust, as have the bones of the noble old proprietor beneath the chancel of the Episcopal church at Winchester, far away from the home and graves of his ancestors.

JOSEPH LYON MILLER, M. D.

ONE HUNDRED AND TWENTY-SEVENTH ANNIVERSARY OF THE BATTLE OF POINT PLEASANT—THE FIRST BATTLE OF THE REVOLUTION—OCTOBER 10th, 1774.

On Thursday, October 10th, 1901, the citizens of Point Pleasant, West Virginia, celebrated the 127th Anniversary of the Battle of Point Pleasant, October 10th, 1774. The first battle of the Revolution.

There were fully ten thousand people there on that day to participate in the celebration. They were the represetative people of the State and we doubt if there was ever in the State gathered for one purpose a more intellectual assembly. They fully demonstrated the spirit of patriotism now so prevalent throughout the land. One of the features of the day was a splendid trades' display, while good music from numerous bands enlivened the occasion. Splendid addresses were delivered by Col. Bennett H. Young, of Louisville, Kentucky, and by General C. H. Grosvenor, of Ohio. The speakers' stand was erected upon the grounds at the point where the Ohio and Kanawha rivers meet. These grounds are beautifully located, with a fine commanding view far up and down both rivers. The location is not only the spot that should have been selected because of its natural beauty, but its historic interest is invaluable. From this point was directed the battle of Point Pleasant and at the time of battle here was their camp. Here the dead were buried next day after the battle, and upon this site was erected Fort Randolph at the close of the conflict.

In 1875 the Legislature of West Virginia made an appropriation of $3,500 toward the erection of a monument com-

memorative of the battle. In 1860 a move was inaugurated to raise funds with which to erect a monument. The amounts raised by private effort and by the State appropriated have been upon interest until the amounts of interest and principle aggregated $11,000. Of this amount $2,000 is only available for a monument. The other $9,000 has been expended for 2 1-2 acres of ground, at the mouth of the river, and the partial grading of the same. The monument commission appointed by the Governor as directed by the last Legislature are as follows: Hon. Jno. P. Austin, President; Hon. V. A. Lewis, Secretary, and Hon. C. C. Bowyer, Treasurer.

These gentlemen have expended the money they had as judiciously as possible, but the work will now rest until the Congress of the United States and the Legislature of West Virginia shall take proper steps to mark this historic spot.

Mrs. Liva Simpson-Poffenbarger, publisher of the *State Gazette*, at Point Pleasant, and the wife of Judge Geo. Poffenbarger, of the Supreme Court of this State, believing that the celebration of the Battle of Point Pleasant would bring the importance of the battle before the country and help create sentiment toward furthering the work, took up the organization of the work of the celebration and gave it her untiring efforts, and her people believing if she willed it to be a success it would be, they rallied to her support and the grand success of the celebration proved how well she had marshalled her forces and what a little town can do in the way of great things if they will try.

Never before did the old town wear such a gala dress. Old glory and buntings galore waved from every residence and business house. There was neither the difference of politics or religion or even the distinction of secret organizations to mar the occasion, but all came together upon a common level for one grand glorification of the celebration of the battle, the farthest reaching in its effect of any battle ever fought upon the American Continent—the first battle of the Revolution—the battle that broke the power of the red men in America; the battle that brought the treaty that enabled civilization to march on to the west and southwest and great northwest; the battle that resulted in ceding to Virginia and thence to the colonies the great Northwest Territory; the battle that defied at its close Tory misrule, the first battle ever fought after the tea had been thrown overboard at Boston Harbor the preceding March. The Boston Port Bill,

of May, 1774, the signal for actual conflict had been passed. The House of Burgesses, of Virginia, had declared the first of June of that year to be "a day of fasting, imploring the Divine interposition to avert the heavy calamity which threatened destruction to their civil rights and the evils of a civil war." Massachusetts had passed resolutions deploring the oppression of Great Britain. Patrick Henry had made his famous speech before the House of Burgesses, of Virginia, declaring that "The war is inevitable, and let it come," and asked "Is life so dear or peace so sweet as to be purchased at the price of chains and slavery?"

England, too, recognized before the battle of Point Pleasant that the war was inevitable, and determined to keep the colonists so busy defending themselves from hostile Indians armed with English ammunition, that they would have no time to think of the wrongs inflicted upon them by the mother country, and Great Britain never had a better tool than Lord Dunmore, the Tory Governor, of Virginia, as his subsequent conduct proved. Hence, the battle of Point Pleasant, in which Lord Dunmore intended the flower of the Colonial army of Virginia to be destroyed, but which victorious, to his surprise, became the first battle in which the blood of patriots were spilled upon American soil for the cause of National Independence, and was so credited by Alexander S. Withers, in his chronicles of Border warfare, later by Bancroft, the Government historian, by President Roosevelt, in his "Winning the West," and by many other historians of repute.

Is it any wonder that West Virginian points with pride to this battle and invited the whole country to celebrate with us?

The Col. Charles Lewis Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution were united to dedicate and name the Park. The society selected their Regent, Mrs. Liva Simpson-Poffenbarger, who had also organized the Chapter and the following is her dedicatory speech:

"Mr. Chairman, Ladies and Gentlemen:

It has been deemed fitting and appropriate, that, by some means, this beautiful and historic spot of ground be dedicated to the noble purpose for which it has been purchased, and given a name by which it may be known in the future. This important duty has not been sought by the organization I

have the honor to represent. I wish to emphasize thefact, without going into explanation or detail, that it has been rather thrust upon us. We are simply doing that which is denied to others who have been invited to do it, by their situation and present circumstances. We have accepted the trust and assumed the duty in the absence of others who might, and we sincerely believe, would have performed it better.

However, I wish to premise that it is not at all inappropriate that the Society of the Daughters of the American

MRS. LIVIA SIMPSON POFFENBARGER.

Revolution perform this most important function. Ours is purely a patriotic organization and this work is carried on in the name of patriotism and inspired by love of country. The objects and purposes of our society are set forth in our constitution, Article I, as follows:

"(1) To perpetuate the memory of the spirit of the men and women who achieved American Independence, by the acquisition and protection of historical spots, and the erection of monuments; by the encouragement of historical research in relation to the Revolution and the publication of its results; by the preservation of documents and relics, and of the rec-

ords of the individual services of Revolutionary soldiers and patriots, and by the promotion of celebrations of all patriotic anniversaries.

(2) To carry out the injunction of Washington in his farewell address to the American people, "To promote, as an object of primary importance, institutions for the general diffusion of knowledge," thus developing an enlightened opinion, and affording to young and old such advantages as shall develop in them the largest capacity for performing the duties of American citizens.

(3) To cherish, maintain, and to extend the institutions of American freedom, to foster true patriotism and love of country, and to aid in securing for mankind all the blessings of liberty."

Another thing I wish to impress upon all here to-day is the fact that ours is the only society professing to be founded exclusively upon our Revolutionary struggle that recognizes the Battle of Point Pleasant as a part of the war for American independence. Reputable historians, including Bancroft, President Roosevelt and others, have asserted that it was the initial, the first battle of the Revolutionary war. Moreover, they have produced the indisputable evidence upon which the assertion is based. What the consensus of American opinion will be as the years shall roll on and historical research shall bring to light the whole truth, we cannot say. If the verdict shall be the affirmative of that proposition then the first battle will not be lacking in display of heroism and patriotism, exhibited in the midst of an almost interminable wilderness and hand to hand with a savage and at the same time valorous foe.

The memory of that great struggle, will, we think, be well and fittingly preserved upon these grounds. A splendid and enduring monument is to be erected commemorative of the battle. On some part of it will be a bronze statue of the heroic Andrew Lewis, the commanding general. On it will be inscribed in imperishable letters the names of the brave Col. Chas. Lewis and Col. Fields and all those who fell with them in defense of liberty and the homes of our race. On these grounds will be laid down and preserved the outlines of old Fort Randolph.

Without some reference to the stubborn foe which drew the brilliant flash of fire from the steel of these heroes, in the shades of primeval forests, far from the abode of any white

man, this history written in grounds, stone, marble and bronze would be incomplete. These red men were fighting for their homes and hunting grounds. From their standpoint, their conduct was patriotic.

They were defending the graves of their fathers.

To the end therefore that history, as far as possible, may be fully preserved and patriotism, in its broadest sense may be recognized, it has been decided to give this park the oldest —first name it has ever been known to possess—its Indian name. By authority of the Monument Commission appointed by the Governor of this state, and in the name of the Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution, we now dedicate this park the property of the state of West Virginia, to patriotism and the preservation of history and name it "Tu Endie-Wei Park," which signifies in the Shawnee tongue "the mingling of the waters," this being the junction of two rivers."

Col. Bennett Young's address was followed by Mr. Louis Reed Campbell's original poems:

OUR HEROES.

Grave by grave, where the rivers meet, and gently flow,
The patriot sleeps, and by his side a vanquished, silent foe.
Year on year with wondrous swiftness glided by,
And yet no stone was reared where brave men dared to die.

Time's hand was in the game that drove the Indian from his land,
In it the shadow of a wrong that greed could not withstand.
More than a century gone ere right doth o'er wrong prevail,
Alike we honor, now, who faced the feathered shaft and rifles' deadly hail.

Departed chieftain of a mighty race, so soon to disappear!
What does the future hold save memory, softened by a tear?
For even now adown the changing slope of fleeting time
The painted warrior glides away, to leave no trail behind.

No power can dim the lustre now of that victorious band,
Who fought and fell and fired again where now we stand.
If fairness to the foe is due, what honor must be theirs
Whose names too sacred for an eulogy, drift upward with our prayers?

The exercises of the day were concluded with the re-interment of Anne Bailey, the heroine of the Kanawha Valley. A permission had been granted by her nearest relatives to remove her remains from the Trotter graveyard 14 miles back from Gallipolis, Ohio, where it rested in an unmarked and almost forgotten grave. It was arranged for Hon. V. A. Lewis, who has done more to preserve the history of Mad Anne, as she was known, than any other, but when the time

came for her burial he not being present all that was mortal of this daring woman was consigned to Virginia soil, a wish so often expressed by her that she should be buried upon the ground where her first husband, Trotter by name, was mortally wounded in the battle of Point Pleasant and buried within the fort; within sight of the place where the man Bailey (who later became her husband,) led the brave Col. Chas. Lewis off the field of battle when mortally wounded. She was laid to rest, the members of the D. A. R. lowering to the bosom of mother earth this real child of the Revolution.

Mrs. Poffenbarger pronounced the eulogy and while this illustrious woman has slept the "sleep that knows no waking, dreams of battle fields no more," her name and her fame will go sounding down through the ages.

The "Virginia Gazette", of October 13, 1774, contained the following extract from a letter from Col. Wm. Preston, of Fincastle, under date of Sept. 28th, 1774:

"That part of the army under the command of Colonel Lewis, which is to meet Lord Dunmore at the mouth of the Great Kanawha, or New River, assembled at the Great Levels of Green river to the amount of about 1,500 rank and file.

Colonel Charles Lewis marched with 600 men on the 6th instant for the mouth of Elk, a branch of New River, which empties some distance below the falls, there to build a fort and prepare canoes.

"Colonel Andrew Lewis marched with another large party the 12th instant for the same place; and Colonel Christian was to march yesterday with the remainder, being about 400, and the last supply of provisions.

"The body of militia being mostly armed with rifle guns and a great part of them good woodmen, are looked upon to be at least equal to any troops, for the number, that have been raised in America.

"It is earnestly hoped that they will, in conjunction with the other party, be able to chastise the Ohio Indians for the many murders and robberies they have committed on our frontiers for many years past."

It will be noticed that the letter of Colonel Preston did not reach Williamsburg till fifteen days after it was dated, and three days after the battle was fought.

The following account of the battle is taken from the *Richmond Dispatch*, and is compiled by Dr. Joseph Lyon Miller, of Thomas, West Virginia, a member of the Virginia Histor-

ical Society and a son of Revolution, tracing his ancestry from Christian Miller and Lieutenant John Henderson who participated in the battle of Point Pleasant:

INDIANS DISCOVERED.

General Lewis and his army waited impatiently at the Point for a message from Lord Dunmore, which did not arrive until October 9th. It was an order to march direct to the Indian towns on the Sciota, so arrangements were made to begin the march on the following morning, but early on that day two soldiers, named Robertson and Hickman, went up the Ohio in quest of game, and when only a short distance from the camp they discovered a large encampment of Indians.

The Indians fired on them, killing Hickman, but Robertson escaped to the camp and reported "a body of Indians covering four acres of ground."

Within an hour the engagement began.

The Indian army, numbering about 1,100, was composed of the flower of the Shawnee, Mingo, Delaware, Cayuga, and Wyandotte tribes, led by Cornstalk, the Sachem of the Shawnees and King of the Northwestern Confederacy, with the help of Logan, Red Hawk, Blue Jacket, and Elinipsico, Cornstalk's son. The Virginia army consisted of nearly the same number of men led by General Andrew Lewis, the most stalwart men of West Augusta.

DESCRIPTION OF THE STRIFE.

Of the contemporary accounts of the battle we have found but two, although a few years later two or three of the survivors left some meager narratives of it. First we will copy a letter that appeared in the Belfast News Letter, Ireland, in 1774. This letter was written from the scene of the battle just a week after its occurrence, and is supposed to have been written by Captain Matthew Arbuckle, who had been left in command of the forces remaining at the mouth of the Kanawha to build and garrison Fort Randolph.

The letter is as follows:

BELFAST.

"Yesterday arrived a mail from New York, brought to Falmouth by the Harriot packet-boat, Captain Lee."

"Williamsburg, Va., November 10th.

"The following letter is just received here from the camp on Point Pleasant, at the mouth of the Great Kanhawa (old spelling), dated October 17, 1774."

"The following is a true statement of a battle fought at this place on the 10th instant: On Monday morning, about half an hour before sunrise, two of Captain Russell's company discovered a large party of Indians about a mile from the camp, one of which men was shot down by the Indians; the other made his escape, and brought in the intelligence. In two or three minutes after, Captain Shelby's company came in and confirmed the account.

"Colonel Andrew Lewis, being informed thereof, immediately ordered out Colonel Charles Lewis, to take command of 150 of the Augusta troops, and with him went Captain Dickinson, Captain Harrison, Captain Wilson, Captain John Lewis, of Augusta, and Captain Lockridge, which made the first division. Colonel Fleming was also ordered to take command of 150 more of the Botetourt, Bedford, and Fincastle troops, viz: Captain Thomas Buford, from Bedford; Captain Love, of Botetourt; Captain Shelby and Captain Russell, of Fincastle, which made the second division."

"Colonel Charles Lewis' division marched to the right, some distance from the Ohio, and Colonel Fleming, with his division, on the bank of the Ohio, to the left."

ATTACK BY THE ABORIGINES.

"Colonel Charles Lewis' division had not marched quite half a mile from the camp when, about sunrise, an attack was made on the front of his division, in most vigorous manner, by the united tribes of Indians—Shawnees, Delawares, Mingoes, Tawas, and of several other nations—in number not less than 800, and by many thought to be 1,000."

"In this heavy attack, Colonel Charles Lewis received a wound which, in a few hours, caused his death, and several of his men fell on the spot; in fact, the American division was obliged to give way to the heavy fire of the enemy In about a second of a minute after the attack on Colonel Lewis' division, the enemy engaged the front of Colonel Fleming's division on the Ohio, and in a short time the Colonel received two balls through his left arm, and one through his breast, and, after animating the officers and soldiers in a most calm manner to the pursuit of victory, retired to the camp."

"The loss in the field was sensibly felt by the officers in particular; but the Augusta troops, being shortly after reinforced from the camp by Colonel Field, with his company, together with Captain McDowell, Captain Stewart, and Captain Mathews, from Augusta; Captain Paulin, Captain Ar-

buckle and Captain McClannahan, from Botetourt, the enemy no longer able to maintain their ground, were forced to give way till they were in a line with the troops. Colonel Fleming being left in action on the bank of the Ohio.

COLONEL FIELD WAS KILLED.

"In the precipitate retreat Colonel Field was killed. During this time, which was till after 12, the action in a small degree abated, but continued, except at short intervals, sharp enough till after 1 o'clock. Their long retreat gave them a most advantageous spot of ground, from whence it apeared to the officers so difficult to dislodge them that it was thought most advisable to stand as the line was then formed, which was about a mile and a quarter in length, and had sustained till then a constantly and equal weight of the action, from wing to wing.

"It was till about half an hour of sunset they continued firing on us scattering shots, which we returned to their disadvantage. At length, the night coming on, they found a safe retreat.

"They had not the satisfaction of carrying off any of our men's scalps, save one or two stragglers, whom they killed before the engagement. Many of their dead they scalped, rather than we should have them, but our troops scalped upwards of twenty of their men that were first killed.

"It is beyond doubt that their loss, in number, far exceeded ours, which is considerable.

VIRGINIA GAZETTE'S ACCOUNT.

The Virginia Gazette of November 12, 1774, contained this account of the battle:

"We have waited till this morning to see if we could get any certain account of the battle, which is said to have happened between the forces under the command of Colonel Andrew Lewis, consisting of about 1,500 men, and a body of Indians, composed of different nations to the amount of 1,100. The following is the most probable account of it, but by no means to be depended upon, and therefore we only give it to the public as a report:

"It seems that Colonel Lewis was encamped within forty miles of the Shawanese towns on this side of the river; that two of his hunters going out early in the morning were fired upon by some Indians, on which they retired into the camp; that Colonel Lewis sent out a small party to drive off the Indians, but met with such constant and heavy firing as to

oblige them to send for more succors; that the Colonel then despatched his brother, Charles Lewis, with a detachment of 900 men to support them; that the battle lasted from 9 o'clock in the morning till 9 at night, both our people and the Indians fighting with the utmost bravery; that the Indians at last gave way and retreated down the river, till they came to a ferrying place which they crossed; that about seventeen of our principal officers were killed, among them Colonel Charles Lewis, Colonel Fleming, Colonel Field, and a son of Colonel Andrew Lewis's; that we had about fifty men killed in all and about ninety wounded; and that twenty Indian bodies were found upon the field and a great number of marks where they had dragged others into the river. Lord Dunmore was encamped about fifteen miles from Colonel Lewis, with whom the Indians had been treating for peace, but a few days before, and it is said that both armies have joined since the battle and crossed the river in order to destroy the Indian towns, and drive off and disperse the barbarians."

COL. J. L. PEYTON'S DESCRIPTION.

We will not attempt to draw a picture of the battle scene, but instead quote the fine description given by Colonel J. L. Peyton, of Augusta county.

Colonel Peyton says:

"It was throughout, a terrible scene—the ring of rifles and the roar of muskets, the clubbed guns, the flashing knives—the fight, hand-to-hand—the scream for mercy, smothered in the death groan—the crushing through the brush—the advance—the retreat—the pursuit, every man for himself, with his enemy in view—the scattering on every side—the sounds of battle—dying away into a pistol shot here and there through the wood, and a shriek—the collecting again of the whites covered with gore and sweat, bearing trophies of the slain, their dripping knives in one hand, and rifle-barrel, bent and smeared with brains and hair, in the other. No language can adequately describe it."

TERMS OF THE TREATY.

As to the terms of the treaty with the Indians that followed this battle, we take the following from the Virginia Gazette, of December 1, 1774:

"We have it from very good authority that his Excellency, the Governor, is on his way to this Capitol, having concluded a peace with several tribes of Indians that have been at war

with us, and taken hostages of them for their faithful complying with the terms of it; the principals of which are: that they shall totally abandon the lands on this side of the Ohio, (which river is to be the boundary between them and the white people), and never take up the hatchet against the English. Thus in little more than the space of five months, an end is put to a war, which portended much trouble and mischief to the inhabitants on the frontiers, owing to the zeal and good conduct of the officers and commanders, who went out in their country's defence, and the bravery and perseverence of all the troops.

"Deaths are a public loss and irreparably so to their distressed families and friends; but their names will be handed down to posterity with honor. The army was broke up, and many of them have arrived at their respective homes."

LIST OF OFFICERS AND MEN.

Unfortunately the names of many of them have not been handed down to posterity at all—with honor or otherwise. The following imperfect list of the officers and men has been gleaned from all the sources available to the writer:

OFFICERS AND MEN.

Andrew Lewis, Brigadier-General, Commanding.

Colonels—Charles Lewis (K), William Fleming, William Christian, John Field (K).

Captains—Matthew Arbuckle, Thomas Buford, John Draper, John Dickinson, James Harrod, — Herbert, Joseph Haynes, Benjamin Harrison, John Lewis, (son of Andrew); John Lewis, (son of William); — Lockridge, — Love, William McKee, Robert McClannahan (K), Samuel McDowell, William Christian, John Field (K), Alexander McClannahan, George Mathews, John Murray (K), William Paul, — Paulin, James Robertson, William Russell, John Stewart, Even Shelby, William Shelby, — Slaughter, I. Skidmore, Daniel Smith, James Ward, Samuel Wilson.

Lieutenants—Hugh Allen (K), John Draper, — Goldman, John Henderson, Thomas Ingles, — Lard, — Robinson, Isaac Shelby, — Tate, — Vance.

Ensigns— — Bracken (K), — Cantiff (K).

Privates—William Arbuckle, John Arbuckle, — Blair, — Clay, (K), Coward, William Campbell, John Campbell, Charles Clendenin, Robert Clendenin, Leonard Cooper, William Eastham, Simon Gerty, (messenger from Dunmore); Ellis Hughes

Philip Hammond, — Hickman (K), Samuel Lewis, son of Andrew; Thomas Lewis, son of Andrew; Simon Kenton, (messenger from Dunmore); Samuel McCullock, (messenger from Dunmore); William Moore, Walter Newman, John Pryor, — Robinson, Alexander Reed, John Steele, — Trotter, James Trimble, John VanBibber, Peter VanBibber, James Welch, Bazatell Wells.

Commissary-General—Thomas Posey.

Butcher—Jacob Warrick.

Sutler—John Frogg (K).

BRIEF BIOGRAPHICAL NOTES.

For thirty years before the battle of Point Pleasant, General Andrew Lewis was connected with the military and civic affairs in Virginia, having been a member of the House of Burgesses for sometime, and a Major of Militia in the French and Indian war.

General Washington was a personal friend to General Lewis, and in the beginning of the Revolution recommended him to Congress for one of the appointments as Major-General, which they failed to do. This slight brought a letter of regret from Washington to General Lewis, and at his request General Lewis accepted the Commission of Brigadier-General. He served until 1780, when he resigned on account of a fever contracted in the low country, of which he soon died.

COLONEL WILLIAM FLEMING.

Colonel William Fleming was a Scotchman by lineage, a physician by profession, and a man of considerable learning. For a time he was a member of the House of Burgesses, and in 1781 a member of the Council, during which time he was for a while acting Governor of Virginia. Later he removed to Kentucky, where he took a prominent part in affairs, and had the honor of a county named for him.

Colonel William Christian was descended from a fine old family from the Isle of Man, dating back for nearly a thousand years. His wife was a sister of Patrick Henry. In 1774 he was a member of the House of Burgesses, and in 1776 Colonel of the first Battalion of Virginia Militia. Later, he, too, removed to Kentucky, where he was killed near Louisville, by Indians, in 1786.

CAPTAINS.

Evan Shelby afterward became Colonel Shelby, and had a distinguished career in Kentucky and Tennessee.

William Shelby was afterward General of Militia and Prominent in Tennessee.

George Mathews became Colonel Mathews, of the Revolution—distinguished at Brandywine, Germantown, and Guilford Court House. Governor of Georgia in 1786 and 1794, and in the interim first United States Senator from Georgia.

John Stuart was later Colonel Stuart, and first clerk of Greenbrier county. He was the author of the fullest account of the battle at Point Pleasant.

William Russell was later Colonel Russell, and father of Colonel William Russell, Jr., both prominent in the early days of Kentucky.

ABOUT ANDREW MOORE.

Andrew Moore attained the rank of Captain in the Continental forces. From 1781 to 1789 he was a member of the Virginia Assembly, and again from 1798 to 1800. In 1788 he was a delegate to the Convention which ratified the United States Constitution. During Washington's entire administration he was a member of Congress from Virginia. In 1800 he was elected to the United States Senate, having the honor of being the only man ever sent to that body from that section of Virginia, west of the Blue Ridge. He served here three years. President Jefferson appointed him Marshall for Virginia in 1810, which place he held till his death in 1821.

Captain McKee was later Colonel McKee, of Kentucky.

John Lewis became Major Lewis, of some prominence in Monroe county, Va.

BENJAMIN HARRISON.

Benjamin Harrison after the war took an active part in the affairs of his section of Virginia. His family founded the town Harrisonburg, in the valley, and were closely related to the Harrisons of Berkeley and Brandon.

Alexander McClannahan was Colonel of the Seventh Virginia Regiment in the Revolution, and later clerk of Augusta county.

Samuel McDowell was a member of the Virginia Convention of March 20, 1775, and a man of some local note.

Daniel Smith was also a man of considerable local note in

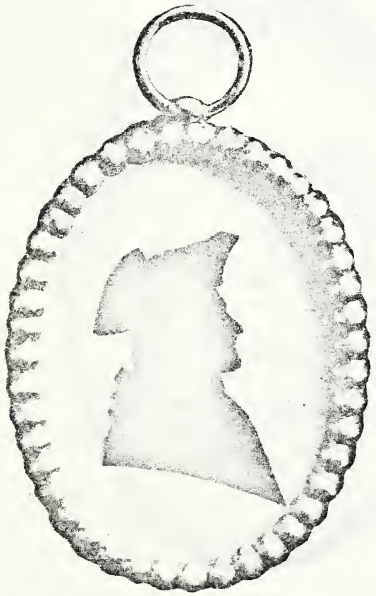
the valley, and was the presiding justice of his county for several years.

James Harrod afterwards became Colonel Harrod, of Kentucky, and founder of the town of Harrodsburg.

LIEUTENANTS.

Isaac Shelby became General Shelby, distinguished at King's Mountain, and Long Island (on the Holston); first Governor of Kentucky, and Secretary of War under President Monroe.

Thomas Ingles was later Colonel Ingles, and a man of some prominence in his county.



LIEUT. JOHN HENDERSON 1739-1787.

John Henderson enlisted in Colonel Daniel Morgan's Regiment of Valley Riflemen in 1775, and served till 1779; in 1780 and later he was a justice of Greenbrier county. His son, John Henderson, was Colonel of the 106th Virginia regiment, in the war of 1812, and longtime member of the Virginia Assembly.

Lieutenant Tate became General Tate, a distinguished citizen of Washington county.

PRIVATES.

William and John Campbell became General William and Colonel John Campbell, of King's Mountain fame.

Charles Cameron was Colonel Cameron, of Bath county.

Bazaleel Wells, General of Militia in Ohio.

John Steele became Colonel Steele of the Revolution, and Governor of Mississippi.

George Clendenin was later Colonel Clendenin, member of the Virginia Assembly for several years from Kanawha county, with Daniel Boone as his first colleague. He was father-in-law of Governor Jonathan Meigs, of Ohio, and founder of the city of Charleston, named for his father.

CAPTAIN WILLIAM CLENDENIN, 1758-1828.

William Clendenin became Major Clendenin of the Kanawha Militia; longtime member of the Virginia Assembly, one of the first justices of Kanawha county, etc.

FATHERS OF DISTINGUISHED SONS.

James Trimble was the founder of the distinguished family of that name in Kentucky and Ohio, father of Governor Allen Trimble, and United States Senator Trimble.

James Welch, first surveyor of Greenbrier county.

Robertson, one of the men who gave the alarm on the morn-

F 705617

ing of battle, it is said, was afterward the distinguished Tennessean, Brigadier-General Robertson.

John and Peter VanBibber were the progenitors of some well-known West Virginia families, a grand-daughter of one of them married Jesse Boone, a son of Daniel Boone.

Simon Kenton became General Kenton, a distinguished Indian fighter.

Simon Girty is well known as the infamous renegade.

Samuel McCulloch was the founder of one of West Virginia's best known families.

William Eastham was the ancestor of a prominent Kanawha Valley family.

Leonard Cooper was later Captain Cooper.

William Arbuckle was, after the Revolution, until Wayne's treaty, captain commandant at Fort Randolph. He was a large land owner in the Kanawha Valley, where he spent the rest of his life. His wife was Catharine Madison, daughter of John Madison, first clerk of Augusta county, and widow of Lieutenant John McClannahan, who was killed on the Boquet expedition in 1764. Her brother, James Madison, was the first American Bishop of the Episcopal Church.

THE LAST SURVIVOR.

It is admitted by all that the last survivor of the battle of Point Pleasant was Ellis Hughes, who died at Utica, Ohio, in 1840, aged over ninety years.

The Indian loss in this battle is not known exactly, but the most accurate account give it as forty-one. The day after the battle the various articles captured from the Indians were sold at auction and brought the sum of £74, 4s, 6d.

We hope that any one knowing the names of other officers or soldiers in the battle of Point Pleasant will report the same to the Dispatch, and aid in making the list of those patriots as complete as possible.

EFFECTS OF THE VICTORY.

When the firing ceased as the sun went down on that October evening a hundred and twenty-seven years ago a haze of smoke hung over the two great silent rivers and dulled the brilliant autumn tints of the primeval forest between. A hard fought battle was ended; a great victory won. Little did those sturdy frontiersmen, as they sorrowfully gathered together their wounded and dead to the number of one hundred and forty, dream of the far-reaching effects of their vic-

tory. They did not know that it meant the power of the Indians east and south of the Ohio river was forever broken; that it meant the dissolution of the terrible confederacy of the Five Nations; that it was the opening battle of a struggle that would end with the birth of one of the greatest nations of the world.

For over a century the dust of those who were buried "without a winding sheet, on the point where two great rivers meet," has lain in an unmarked grave. No stone commemorates their names or work. But let us hope that this will not be for long; since the West Virginia Legislature and the patriotic Sons and Daughters of the Revolution in Mason county have taken up the work of raising a memorial at the point where the Great Kanawha meets La Belle riviere to the honor and glory of these brave men of west Augusta.

ISAAC WILLIAMS.

From advance sheets of "Annals of Wood County, A Century's Progress, from Pine-Knots to Electric Lights".

By Alvaro F. Gibbens, A. M.

Among the pioneers West of the Alleghenies were many who gained a subsistance from and loved trapping and hunting wild game. One of the most noted and honored was Isaac Williams, whose name is now and will ever be borne on the list of towns in Wood county.

This class of settlers were courageous, hardy and hospitable. In their rude cabins and hunting camps they were, in their simple but manly dress, ever ready to welcome the stranger, and share with him their frugal fare. In order to aid in defence of the pioneer homes, the Virginia House of Burgesses commissioned rangers or spies, whose duty it was to discover and trace the course of the Indians when raiding, to give warning and otherwise assist. One of these is named in this sketch.

He was born in Chester county, Penn., 16th of July, 1737, and, with his parents when a youth, moved to Winchester, Virginia, where he developed the qualities which made him valuable and famous in after years. He was commissioned when only 18 years old by the Colonial government to watch

the savages on the frontier along the Ohio river. In this capacity he served under Braddock in the disastrous campaign of 1754. He also aided in guarding the first convoy of provisions and ammunition to Fort Du Quesne, after its capture by General Forbes in 1758, when it was changed to Fort Pitt. That part of Pennsylvania was then claimed and accredited to Virginia. The next ten years he followed hunting and trapping along the Ohio and Mississippi and tributaries, returning each season in safety with a rich load of furs.*

"In the prime of life he was occupied in hunting and in making entries of lands. This was done by girdling a few trees and planting a patch of corn, which operation entitled to 400 acres of land, and privilege of purchase of 1,000 adjacent acres. These entries were aptly called tomahawk entries. An enterprising man could make a number of these in a season, and sell to persons who coming later to the country, had not so good opportunity to select the best lands. Williams sold many of these rights for a few dollars, or the value of a rifle gun, then thought a fair equivalent, so little value was placed upon land, and besides like other hunters of the day wild lands were only looked at as hunting grounds, worth but little to an owner, and as much to the trapper. These entries were named Pre-emption Rights, and many of the richest lands on the Ohio river are held under these original titles."

He was with the Dunmore expedition in 1774 against the Shawnees, then warring against the colonies under the noted chieftain Cornstalk. After the battle of Point Pleasant he was present at conclusion of the Peace treaty, held near Chillicothe, Ohio.

In October, 1775, at Grave Creek he married Mrs. Rebecca Martin, whose husband John, a trader, had been killed in 1770 on Big Hocking by the Indians. Hartness, her uncle on the mother's side, was murdered at the same time by the Shawonese. She was the daughter of Joseph Tomlinson; born 14th of February, 1754, at Mill's Creek, on the Potomac, Maryland. She had been for several years, from 1771, at Grave Creek, housekeeper for her two brothers Samuel and Joseph, Jr. In the spring of 1773 her brothers, also trappers, girdled the trees on 4 acres, pre-empting for her 400 acres of land in Virginia, nearly opposite the mouth of the Muskingum river, and there built a cabin and raised a crop of corn.

*Hildreth's Pioneers of Ohio Valley.

The fertility of the alluvial soil is well known even at this day.

Fort Harmar having been erected and garrisoned by United States troops, Ranger Williams and his wife moved into the cabin 24th of March, 1787. Soon after their only child, Drusilla, was born, who became the wife of Squire John G. Henderson, son of Alex. Henderson, of Dumfries, Virginia.

From this union one child was born; dying an infant. From this time pioneer Williams ceased hunting save as a recreation, and devoted his energies and time to the improvement and cultivation of his farm, succeeding in making it very productive, and his home an attractive resort for neighbors, friends and travelers.

The Virginia Assembly by Act of 11th of December, 1789, authorized him to equip and run a ferry over the Ohio river and below the mouth of the Muskingum. The right was afterwards extended to make a landing also at the new settlement, Marieta, above the river's mouth. This was, perhaps, the first ferry within the present limits of the county.

He was of medium height, muscular in limb, erect in carriage, athlete in motion, features regular, but characteristic, rather reticent in conversation, but mild and winning in all his ways. His heart, as well as his body and brain, were equal to all the emergencies of life.

Illustrative of his kindness and mercy, it is said that in September, 1789, when the new settlers of the Ohio Land Company began to suffer for want of food, an untimely frost having destroyed the corn, and they were reduced to almost starvation, and even green corn cakes were a luxury, from the abundance of his own bins, filled by his own industry and care, he was the Mecca of their hopes and their preservation. Speculators, eager to take advantage of a scarcity, offered him a dollar and a quarter per bushel for his entire stock of corn, intimating that the demand would justify any price he might set upon it. With indignation he sent such applicants away without single grain. Alluding to the speculators, who like honored men of metropolitan marts, desire to corner the markets, he said as he turned them away and rejected their efforts to purchase his surplus at high rates, "Dod rot 'em. I would not let them have a bushel." Saving scarcely enough for his own use, he divided the rest of his store among needy ones, accepting only fifty cents per bushel from those able to pay, and nothing from the poor. No wonder such character-

istic acts of generosity and relief gave him an enviable position in the hearts of pioneers in all that region. Many years previous to his demise he liberated all his six or eight slaves, and by will devised to them tokens of love and good will. He died the 25th of September, 1820, aged eighty-four. His remains and those of his family repose in a beautiful reservation upon the plantation shaded by trees that may have sheltered him in Ranger days. By his desire the homestead descended to John A. Kinnard, who had wedded Mary, daughter of Joseph and Elizabeth Tomlinson. To this farm in 1807 came Kinnard, with his young wife. She died in Parkersburg, 16th of March, 1873, aged 87; he, 2nd of May, 1850, aged 73.

Rebecca Williams, widow Martin, *nee* Tomlinson, had migrated, with her brothers in 1771 to the wilderness of Grove Creek, on the Ohio, and as a girlish housekeeper, had frequently been left alone for days while they were out hunting. She was fearless of danger, as was he who had chosen her for a companion.

*Her niece, Mrs. Bukey, relates to an early historian, this incident:

In the spring of the year, 1774, she made a visit to a sister, Mrs. Baker, on the Ohio river, opposite the mouth of Yellow Creek. It was soon after the massacre of Logan's relatives at Baker's station. Having finished her visit, she prepared to return home in a canoe by herself, the traveling being done entirely by water. The distance from Grove Creek, to her sister's was about 50 miles. She left there in the afternoon, paddled her light canoe rapidly along until dark. Knowing that the moon would rise at a certain hour, she landed and fastening the slender craft to the willows she leaped on shore, and lying down in a thick clump of bushes, waited the rising of the moon. As soon as it had cleared the tops of the trees, and began to shed its cheerful rays over the dark bosom of the Ohio, she prepared to embark. The water being shallow near the shore, she had to wade a few paces before geting into the canoe; when just in the act of stepping on board, her naked foot rested on the dead cold body of an Indian, who had been killed a short time before, and which in the gloom of the night she had not seen in landing. Without screaming or flinching she stepped lightly into the canoe, with the reflection that she was thankful he was

*Hildreth, in Pioneers of Ohio Valley.

not alive. Resuming the paddle she arrived at the mouth of Grove Creek without any further adventure, early the following morning.

Walter Scott's Rebecca, the Jewess, was not more celebrated for her cures and skill in treating wounds, than was Rebecca Williams amongst the honest borderers of the Ohio river. About the year 1784, while living a short time at Wheeling, on account of Indian depredations, she, with the assistance of Mrs. Zane, dressed the wounds of Mr. Mills, four in number, from rifle shots. He, with Hamilton Kerr and one other man were spearing fish by torchlight about a mile above the garrison, when they were fired on by a party of Indians, secreted on the shore. Mills stood in the bow of the canoe holding the torch, and as he was a fair mark, received most of the shots. One leg and one arm were broken in addition to flesh wounds. Had he been in the regular service with plenty of surgeons, he probably would have lost one or both limbs by amputation. These women, with their fomentations and simple applications of slippery-elm bark, not only cured his wounds, at the time deemed impossible, but also saved both his limbs. In a conversation many years after, she said her principle dressings were made of slippery-elm bark, the leaves of stramonium, and daily ablutions with warm water. Many similar cures of gun-shot wounds are related, as performed by her in the first settlement of the country.

Their marriage was as unostentatious and simple as the manner and habits of the parties. A travelling preacher happening to come into the settlement, as they sometimes did, though rarely, they were married at her brother's house, without any previous preparations of nice dresses, bride-cakes, or bride-maids; he standing up in his hunting dress, and she in a short gown and petticoat of homespun, the common wear of the people.

In the summer of 1774, the year before her marriage, she was one morning busily occupied in kindling a fire preparatory to breakfast, with her back to the door, on her knees puffing away at the coals. Hearing some one step cautiously on the floor, she looked around and beheld a tall Indian, close to her side. He made a motion of silence to her, at the same time shaking his tomahawk in a threatening manner, if she made any alarm. He, however, did not offer to harm her, but looking carefully round the cabin, es-

pied her brother's rifle hanging over the fire-place. This he seized upon, and fearing the arrival of some of the men, hasted his departure without any further damage. While he was with her in the house she preserved great presence of mind and betrayed no marks of fear, but no sooner had he gone than she left the cabin and hid in the corn field until her brother Samuel came in. He was lame at the time and happened to be out of the way; so it is probable his life was saved from this circumstance. It was but seldom that the Indians killed unresisting women or children, except in the excitement of an attack, and when they had met with resistance from the men.

In 1777 depredations and massacres were so frequent that the settlement at Grove Creek of several families was broken up. It was a frontier station, and lower on the Ohio than any other above the mouth of Big Kanawha. This year Indians made an attack on the settlement and garrison at Wheeling. Williams and family and the Tomlinsons moved over on the Monongahela above Red Stone old fort. Here he remained till the spring of 1783, when all returned to Grove Creek plantations. In the year 1784 he had to again remove from the farm into Wheeling garrison.

In the spring of 1785 John Wetzel, younger brother of Lewis, noted Indian hunter, then sixteen years old, with a neighboring boy of the same age, was in search of horses that had strayed in the woods on Wheeling Creek, where the father of John resided. One of the stray animals was a mare with young foal, belonging to John's sister, and she had offered a colt to John as a reward for finding the mare. While on this service they were captured by the Indians, who having come across the horses in the woods, had taken and placed them in a thicket, expecting that their bells would attract the notice of their owners, and they could then capture them, or take their scalps. The horse was ever a favorite object of plunder with the savages, as not only facilitating their own escape from pursuit, but also assisted them in carrying off the spoils. The boys hearing the well-known tinkle of the bells, approached the spot where the Indians lay concealed, and were taken prisoners. John, in attempting to escape was shot through the arm. On their march to the Ohio, his companion made so much lamentation on account of his captivity, that the Indians killed him, with their tomahawk; while John, who had once before been a prisoner,

made light of it, and went along cheerfully with his wounded arm.

The party struck the Ohio river early the following morning at a point near the mouth of Grove Creek just below the clearing of Tomlinson. Here they found some hogs belonging to Williams, and killing one of them with a rifle shot, put it into a canoe they had secreted when on their way out. Three of the Indians took possession of the canoe with their prisoner, while the other Indian was occupied in swimming the horses across the river. It so happened that Williams and Hamilton Kerr, and Jacob, a Dutchman, had come down from Wheeling the evening before to look after the stock left on the plantation, and passed the night at the deserted Tomlinson cabin. While at the outlet of Little Grove creek, about a mile above, they heard the report of a rifle shot in the direction of the plantation.

"Dod rot 'em," exclaimed Williams, "a Kentuck boat has landed at the creek, and they are shooting my hogs." Immediately quickening their pace to a rapid trot, they in a few minutes, were within a short distance of the creek, when they heard the loud snort of a horse. Kerr being in the prime of life and younger than Williams, reached the mouth of the creek first. As he looked down into the stream he saw three Indians standing in a canoe; one was in the stern, one in the bow and one in the middle of the boat. At the feet of the latter lay four rifles and the dead hog; while the fourth Indian was swimming a horse across the Ohio, only a few rods from shore. The one in the stern was in the act of shoving the canoe from the mouth of the creek into the river. Before they were aware of his presence Kerr shot the Indian in the stern, who fell into the water. The crack of the rifle had barely ceased, when Williams came onto the bank and shot the Indian in the bow of the canoe, who also fell overboard. Jacob was now on the ground, and Kerr seizing his rifle shot the remaining Indian in the waist of the boat. He fell over into the water, but still held onto the side of the canoe, with one hand. The whole process did not occupy more than a minute of time.

The canoe impelled by the impetus given to it by the Indian first shot, reached the current of the Ohio, and was a rod or two below the mouth of the creek. Kerr had now reloaded his gun, and seeing another Indian, as he thought, laying in the bottom of the canoe, raised it in the act of firing, when

he called out, "Don't shoot; I am a white man." Kerr told him to knock loose the Indian's hand from the side of the boat and paddle to the shore. He said his arm was broken and he could not. The current however sent it near some rocks not far from land, onto which he jumped and waded out. Kerr now aimed his rifle at the Indian on horseback, who by this time had reached the midle of the Ohio. The shot struck near him, splashing the water onto his naked skin. He, seeing the fate of his companions, with the bravery of an ancient Spartan, slipped from the back of the horse, and swam for the abandoned canoe, in which were the rifles of the four Indians. This was, in fact, an act of necessity, as well as of noble daring, as he well knew he could not reach his country, without the means of killing game by the way. He also was aware, that there was little danger in the act, as his enemies could not cross the creek to molest him. He soon gained possession of the boat, crossed with the arms to his own side of the Ohio, mounted the captive horse, which with the others had swam to the Indian shore, and with a yell of defiance escaped into the woods. The canoe was turned adrift, and taken up near Maysville, with the dead hog still in it, which had led to their discovery by the shot, and was the cause of all their misfortune."

Next winter, 1773-4, the two Tomlinson brothers hunted on the Great Kanawha, where bears and beaver greatly abounded. Some time in Mar. 1774, on their return they were detained some days at Kanawha by a remarkably high freshet in the Ohio, which from certain fixed marks on Wheeling creek, is supposed to have been fully equal to that of Feb., 1832. This year was known as that of the Dunamore war.

The repeated inroads of Indians led Williams to seek a more quiet home than at Grove creek. Under the protection of the U. S. troops at Fort Harmar, erected in 1786, he decided on occupying lands of his wife opposite in sight of the fort. The place opened by Tomlinsons in 1773 had grown up with young saplings. He visited the spot, put up a cabin in the winter, and moved into it 26th March, 1787, the year before arrival of the Ohio colony.

Whenever a little unwell in later years, he forsook his comfortable home, and with his rifle and favorite dog, "Cap," with one of his black servants as attendant, would seek the woods, encamp by some clear stream, and remain until his health was restored, eating the food his rifle procured, and

drinking the cool pure water. The medicines taken were none, save simple ones from the forest. The wilderness had rare charms for him. Trapping the beaver was his favorite pursuit, and even when 70 years old, if he heard of one seen within 50 miles of his home, he mounted his horse, took his traps, and returned not till he caught it. Often the proceeds of a beaver hunt, in early years, realized three or four hundred dollars to the trapper.

During the war from 1791 to 1795 he remained unmolested in his cabin, view of which can be seen in the cut of Fort Harmar, (in De Hass Indian Wars p——.)

Around his dwelling he had also further protection of a stockade sheltering his own and several other families.

De Hass says of him: "He seldom spoke of his own exploits, and when related, they generally came from the lips of his companions. There was one situation in which he could be induced to relax his natural reserve, and freely narrate the romantic and hazardous adventures that had befallen him in his hunting and war excursions, and that was when encamped by the evening fire, in some remote spot, after the toils of the day were closed, and the supper of venison and bear meat ended.

Here, while reclining on a bed of fresh autumnal leaves, beneath the lofty branches of the forest with no listener but the stars and his companions, the spirit of narration would come upon him, and for hours he would rehearse the details of his youthful and hazardous adventures by forest, flood and field. In such situations, surrounded by the works of God, his body and mind felt a freedom that hut and clearing could not give. In this manner the late Alexander Henderson, a man of refined taste and cultivated manners, has said that he passed some of the most interesting hours of his life, when hunting with M. S. Williams, on the head waters of the Little Kanawha.

He had no sympathy with vicious words or actions. Often he reproved keel-boatmen and others for their profanity. He nursed abandoned boatmen to health beneath his humble roof."*

In 1768 he conducted his parents over the mountains, to a new home, near West Liberty, now in Brooke county, West Virginia. He guided the Zane brothers in 1769 in their expeditions around Wheeling and the Zanesville region of

*Hildreth Pioneers of the Ohio Valley.

the Muskingum. Through these and previous excursions he became thoroughly conversant with the outline of river and land, and entered several tomahawk rights which he sold.

He died 25th September, 1820, and lies buried along with his devoted Rebecca, in the reservation of one acre of his settlement which by his Will, dated 4th Oct., 1818, he devoted to "a burial place forever." The Williamstown Historical Society has of recent years made effort to rescue the resting place of this pioneer from oblivion and neglect. In Williams' Will he forgot not the faithful slaves of his plantation. Phoebe was to become free at his death, with the gift of one hundred dollars; all others were to be set free at the death of his Rebecca, with one hundred dollars to the males at 21, and to females at 18. To his body servant, Isaac Ewing, "for good and faithful services at all times rendered to me, I give and bequeath my rifle, with all accoutrements to the same belonging, and one of my best horses, saddle and bridle."

THE RUFFNERS.

III. DAVID—SECOND ARTICLE.

By Dr. W. H. Ruffner.

Col. David Ruffner's superior intellect, his achievements, his genial disposition, his generosity and his magisterial authority so prominently characterized him that the people of his day thought but little, and the people of this day know nothing of the violence of his temper, which on very rare occasions under extraordinary provocation, especially in the earlier half of his life, developed outbursts of ferocity. Under its influence he rushed upon opposition and defied some of the highest principles which ordinarily controlled him.

An example of this occurred early in the century in a physical contest between him and Col. Andrew Donnally, a man of like passion, equally brave and determined, and not much if at all inferior in muscular ability. They met like highland chiefs, but without weapons except their sledge hammer fists. It was a terrible conflict, and the result was doubtful until one of the combatants seized a Dutch anvil and gave the *coup de grace*. The wounds proved not to be serious, and the

friendship which had existed before was restored ere long. The contest originated in the double claim of ownership of an interest in the Dickinson Survey; which was afterward decided by the Court.

I believe that the sequel of this rencounter was still more serious as concerned Col. Ruffner. The Sheriff was sent to arrest him, but was driven ignominiously from the premises. The officer reported to the Court in Charleston that Col. Ruffner defied his authority. This roused the Court, who ordered that he should be brought to the Court House "*dead or alive*". When the Sheriff and posse went again the Colonel fought them fiercely until disabled by wounds. He was then carried to a boat, and delivered in the Court House in a helpless condition.

All this was utterly inconsistent with the tenor of Col. Ruffner's life, as will be clearly shown in this article. Gen. Washington had a tiger in him that sometimes broke loose; and so had Gen. R. E. Lee, but the latter kept his tiger chained.

Col. Ruffner was a militia Colonel, but I suppose that his military operations consisted simply of organizing his regiment and attending a few musters.

His love for reading continued through life. He had a substantial library, though in that day of costly books its size would not equal that of a man of his means in this day of cheap books. There were few men on the River his equal in intelligence. Rev. Stuart Robinson said of him: "He attained to a degree of general intelligence that would have done credit to a liberally educated man". He gave his two sons a college education. He took Wm. S. Plumer off a store boat and set him to teaching a school, which he raised for him. He gave the lot whereon was built Mercer Academy and the first Presbyterian Church in Charleston. The new Church is on the same lot, and also the Masonic building.

It is stated in the History of Kanawha Valley by Hale and Lewis (page 253):

"That the first attempt to establish a school of high grade in the Valley was made by Col. David Ruffner in 1816. Through his efforts the building known as Mercer Academy was erected on the lot on which now stands the First Presbyterian Church of Charleston. A joint stock company was organized, and by an Act of Assembly passed Feb. 18th, 1818,

was incoporated under the name of the "President and Trustees of Mercer Academy".

The first Academy building was burnt in a few years, and the second building was smaller. The lot was given verbally before the erection of the first building, but the title deed was not executed until 1829. It contained one acre and was given for the use of the Presbyterian Church and Mercer Academy. The preamble says: "Whereas the said David Ruffner is desirous to promote Religion and Learning by affording and increasing the opportunities of public instruction and worship," &c.

Some years ago Mercer Academy was merged into the public school system, the lot whereon the building stood sold, and the name carried to a public school in another part of the city.

The strong impression made by the young German soon after his arrival in 1796 was shown not only by his appointment as magistrate in a few months, but by the fact that he was elected to represent the County in the House of Delegates in 1799, only three years after he came. He was again elected in 1801, again in 1802, again in 1804 and again in 1811.

Whilst serving his last term in Richmond he witnessed the awful catastrophe of the burning of the Richmond Theatre on the night after Christmas, 1811. The house was crowded, and in the boxes were much of the beauty, wealth and distinction of the City and State. The stair cases were narrow, and were soon jammed immovably. The dry-wooden house burnt like shavings. Some persons climbed or jumped down from the box circle into the parquet, and found egress. Many jumped to the ground from the second story windows; very few of whom escaped unhurt; those in burning clothes nearly all perished.

Col. Ruffner escaped early from the building, and immediately placed himself under some second story windows, and called to the screaming ladies to jump into his arms; which they began to do at once. By his great strength he thus saved many; but finally a large lady jumped upon him, and bore him to the ground. In his efforts to assist her his back was wrenched so violently as to disable him for further service.

Col. Ruffner's long and notable career as a magistrate attracted great attention at the time, and is still talked about.

Dr. Robinson on this point says: "For 47 years (53 years counting his Shenandoah service) up to the time of his death he filled his office with a faithfulness and zeal seldom if ever surpassed. To sustain laws—to discountenance vice—to be a terror to the lawless—to render justice to all—to take care of the poor—seemed as much his business as if he devoted himself solely to the duties of a magistrate. He was as near the beau-ideal of a Virginia magistrate as any that I have ever known. Probably he was as near being the living exemplification of the idea of a magistrate that floated in the minds of the originators of the justice system of Virginia as has ever filled the office in the State".

In punishing offenders, he occasionally originated a penalty not named in the Statute, as in the well known instance in which he gave an Irishman the option of taking a whipping or climbing a particularly thorny honey-locust tree. The man preferred the latter, and though sorely pricked and scratched, thanked his Honor. He also acted at times as both magistrate and constable, arresting or driving off offenders. One Sunday he found a store boat not far from his house selling goods including whiskey. He ordered the party to shut up or leave, both of which they refused to do. He approached with hatchet to cut their cables. The men seized their iron-shod poles and threatened to spear him. Not noticing their threats he cut the ropes, and with his foot pushed the boat out into the current.

The character of the population which infested the salt-works during the earlier period of its history is thus described by Dr. Henry Ruffner in a manuscript which I have in my possession, written in 1860. Speaking of the early days, he writes:

"Adventurers flocked in from all parts of the country eager to share in the spoils. Most of the newcomers were men of bad morals. Some were young men of good character. Many boatmen of the old school frequented these salt-making shores, before steamboats in a great measure had superseded the old sorts of river craft. The old people of Kanawha remember no doubt what horrible profanity, what rioting and drunkenness, what quarrelling and fighting, what low gambling and cheating prevailed through this community in those days.

As to religion it could hardly be said to exist except in the hearts of a few. I may venture to say that a thousand words

of cursing and swearing were heard for every word of prayer and thanksgiving to God."

Dr. Ruffner adds that the locality now included in Malden was in those days "the wickedest and most hopeless part of Kanawha". Of course, when he made those remarks he had no reference to the population then existing (1860), which was a great improvement on that of the period he was alluding to.

Col. Ruffner for perhaps 20 years after the salt-making began was in the midst of the population described by his son Henry. But he faced all dangers and duties with a heroism and devotion that made him a power in the land, and contributed largely to the improvement of the community.

But he yet lacked one important element for the rounding out of his character, and this was added when he united with the Charleston Church, Dec. 11th, 1819, and was baptized in the presence of the congregation. His son Henry had organized this Church on the 14th of March the same year. On the 5th of November the next year, the father was ordained an elder by his son. He soon showed that joining the Church and accepting the eldership meant a great deal to him. It was not long until he was recognized as a distinguished soldier of the cross. Henceforward he was to light with the sword of the Spirit as well as the sword of the magistrate. In four years after he enlisted for Christ he turned over all his secular business to his son Lewis, and gave himself wholly to the improvement of the people without fee or reward in either his moral or legal field of action. It looks as if he heard a call of God to this pious and humanitarian work. He quit business at 56, which to him was scarcely past his prime, and if an angel had brought him the Divine message, he could not have devoted himself more promptly and vigorously to this noble service.

He provided a meeting house on his own ground close to his residence; a well built frame house sufficient to accommodate perhaps 200 people. This place he made the center of moral, religious and educational operations. Its most important function was an annex to the Charleston Church, and as such continued to grow in importance until there were not only preachings, but sacramental meetings, meetings of the elders, and finally a separate organization, which grew and ultimately built the brick Church in Malden. The Colonel was always on the lookout for preachers, whom he would

take to his house; send out runners day or night any day in the week to collect a congregation, be it large or small, and keep the brother at work as long as he could hold him. And so was it with lectures upon all good subjects. He had his Sunday Schools and Bible classes, also common day-school, singing schools and choir meetings, prayer meetings, debating society, and temperance societies.

The Colonel was prominent in them all, generally the leader. He had no great talent for music, but he sang heartily, generally raised the tunes and was the life of the whole musical movement. As for rhetoric or oratory, he did not remember that there were such things, but he would rise to his feet in any meeting, and express his views in terse language. He never failed to hold the attention of his entire audience, and generally carried his point. He never lost entirely his German accent, but it was not very pronounced. Among his own people he expounded, exhorted and reproved; sometimes addressing persons by name; but he was allowed to say what he pleased, as all regarded him as a father, who was giving his heart and life, and much of his money, for the good of the people. He worked and he talked with an infectious enthusiasm that carried everybody with him.

Before the meeting house was provided the Colonel's dwelling house was freely used for religious services. Upon one occasion when the Rev. Calvin Chaddock was conducting a service at the house a youth of 17 received deep impressions which ultimately led him into the Christian ministry, where he became one of the grandest preachers of the age. I allude to Wm. S. Plumer, who came to Kanawha as the steers-man on his father's store boat. Col. Ruffner took him to his house, set him to teaching a primary school, and made arrangements whereby the young man went to Dr. McElheney's Academy at Lewisburg, and thence to Washington College. When the Colonel died Dr. Plumer said in his paper, The Watchman of the South: "With great sorrow of heart we received the following letter (from Rev. Stuart Robinson). The deceased was our friend and our father's friend. In his house was received our first religious impressions. He was to us indeed a father."

After Col. Ruffner became an elder in the Church he not only performed the duties commonly expected of that officer, but took up deacon's and pastoral work as well. Every family connected with the congregation he visited regularly and

frequently. In his kindly, social way he instructed, exhorted, warned, and if need be, reproved. They all felt that they had to account to him for their failure to attend Church, for any irregularity of conduct and for their behavior generally. The whiskey drinker dodged him. The profane swearer was careful of his speech.

He looked after the poor and needy with tenderness, and his charities were endless, but if the poverty came from drink or laziness he rebuked severely. Nor was he indifferent to the moral and spiritual welfare of the negroes. He fenced off one end of his Church for their use, and persuaded them to come. Quite a number of them were received as members of the Church. His heart was as wide as humanity, and his sense of duty knew no limits.

He was known as the universal friend. Children were his pets. Nothing made him happier than to overload his carriage with children, and drive them hilariously up and down the road.

He not only loved all denominations of Christians, but he was ever ready to help them in their work. An instance of this spirit is given in Atkinson's History of Kanawha County. Describing a Methodist Camp Meeting held at the mouth of Camp Ground Hollow on Two-Mile Creek of Elk, the author says:

"Of the laity Col. David Ruffner, who may in a certain sense be called the father of Presbyterianism in Kanawha Valley, claims first attention. 'My first recollection of him,' said Hon. Greenberry Slack, an aged citizen of the County now gone to rest,' was at the Camp Meeting on Two-Mile Creek of Elk River. He built a tent as large as any other three on the ground, working at it with his own hands, and overlooking its construction, where he accommodated during the entire meeting over one hundred persons free of charge; and in which the evenings were spent in some of the most glorious prayer meetings I ever witnessed, anywhere. These the old gentleman generally conducted himself. Mr. Ruffner always regarded all who loved the Lord Jesus Christ as one in Christ Jesus."

The Presbyterian Church at Malden may be called his handiwork, as to both the organization and the building. The first bench of elders consisted chiefly of the patriarch and his two sons-in-law, Putney and Fuqua. Many amusing stories used to be told of his admiration for the architecture of the

present brick building, and of his requiring every brick to be taken down that was laid in his absence. And as for the paying he never let a man go away without his money. Generally he gave orders on his son Lewis, who told me that he thus paid out about fifteen hundred dollars, very little of which ever came back.

The original frame church continued to be used for public purposes as long as the old gentleman lived. One of his temperance societies held its meetings there and other societies were scattered among the salt furnaces. On the 4th of July, 1842, the year before he died, he assembled all his temperance societies at the old Church to be marched in a body to the new Church half a mile distant. Before the next 4th, the old hero had rested from his labors; but there was again a temperance celebration in the Church largely attended, many persons coming from Charleston. I was present, and heard a Methodist Clergyman describe in simple language the celebration of the year before. How the old Colonel formed the procession and put it in motion, he marching at the head of the column. nOce looking back he stepped out of ranks and seeing the long line lifted his hat, and exclaimed: "This is a triumph". Before the preacher finished his description the audience was in tears, some wept aloud. One deep, manly voice sobbed so loud as to be heard over the whole house. It was the voice of that great-hearted lawyer, Col. Ben. Smith.

Col. Ruffner died Feb. 1st, 1843. He was just commencing his 77th year. Dr. Robinson in his obituary notice said of him: "By general acknowledgment he has been our most useful citizen". Concerning his characteristics Dr. Robinson writes: "To all difficulties and troubles in business affairs or in religion, he opposed a perseverance that never tired nor halted till his ends were attained. His firmness and decision of character were overmatched for either the threats, the persuasions, or the derision of those who would turn him from his purpose. Nothing could daunt him in the prosecution of duty. To him more aptly probably than anyone else you have ever known might be appropriated the eulogy pronounced on John Knox: 'He never feared the face of man'. And yet as a man he was so kind-hearted—as a friend so amiable and artless— as a benefactor so sympathizing and generous—as a citizen so full of public spirit, as a magistrate so upright, and above all, as a Christian so im-

bued with 'that mind which was also in Christ Jesus', that not one but feels that he has lost something in the death of Col. Ruffner. The rich and poor alike—the man of grey hairs and the child of tender years, feel each that a friend has been taken from him".

Col. Ruffner's last words, spoken to his son Lewis, and engraven on his tombstone, were: "I die at peace with God and all mankind."

Did space permit I should quote the whole proceedings of the County Court on the occasion of his death. I will give only a few extracts:

"Col. David Ruffner was a member of this Court for 47 years, and for many years its presiding officer, discharged his duties with diligence, ability and impartiality; administering justice to all without regard to rank or station. We esteem his whole official life as an example that any of his surviving brethren may adopt with advantage, and which few can expect successfully to imitate. * * * * * * * *

"The latter years of Col. Ruffner have been not less distinguished for his generous devotion to the improvement of the moral condition of his County by aiding with argument, persuasions and liberal donations in the establishment and maintenance of every society and institution, religious, moral or literary, which in his opinion were calculated to improve and elevate the moral character of the people.

"That in the opinion of the Court one of the most amiable and excellent traits of character to which human nature can aspire has been beautifully exemplified in the acts and conduct of the deceased in the latter years of his life by unostentatious and open-handed charities to the poor and needy of his neighborhood, by untiring efforts to reclaim the abandoned and profligate, ministering to the sick, whether of body or mind, and by going about as a good Samaritan in search of his suffering fellow-men".

The members of the bar cordially and unanimously concurred in the above resolutions.

HON. PHILIP DODDRIDGE, OF BROOKE COUNTY, VIRGINIA.

By W. S. Laidley.

The ancestry of this notable man, as given by the family, is as follows:

The first of the name that came from England was John Doddridge, who settled in New Jersey many years before the Revolution, and who afterwards established himself in Maryland. His children were Ann and Joseph.

Joseph Doddridge married Mary Biggs, and he died in Bedford county, Pennsylvania in 1779, leaving six daughters and two sons, *Philip* and *John*.

Philip left Maryland in 1770, and settled near the mouth of Dunkards creek, in Virginia, when in May, 1778, a band of Wyandotte Indians destroyed his buildings and took captive three of his children, and he then removed to Washington county, Penna.

John Doddridge, the other son of Joseph, was born in Maryland, March 30, 1745, O. S., and he married Mary Wells, a daughter of Col. Richard Wells, Dec. 23, 1767. Shortly afterwards he removed to Friends Cove, a valley a few miles south of Bedford, Bedford county, Pa., and his father having neg-

lected to complete his title to a settlement right, he lost his estate, and John then removed to the western part of Washington county, Pa., where he in 1773 located a farm of about 400 acres and on which he resided until his death in April, 1791, and on which farm he erected a chapel, which was ever afterwards known as "Doddridge's Chapel," and it was said to be the first chapel built west of the Alleghenies. In their native State the family belonged to the Church of England, but after coming west they attached themselves to the Wesleyan Methodist Church.

His wife, Mary Wells, died in 1776.

John and Mary Doddridge had two sons and three daughters. Joseph, the eldest son, was born Oct. 14, 1769, in Bedford county, Pa., and he died in Wellsburg, Virginia, Nov. 4, 1826. He was an Episcopal Minister and Author.

Philip Doddridge, the younger son, and the subject of this sketch, was born in Bedford county, Pa., May 17, 1773, in the same year in which his father established himself on a farm which was supposed to be in Western Virginia, but when the line between Virginia and Pennsylvania was established by protracting the Mason and Dixon line, their home was found to be about three miles on the Pennsylvania side of said line, in Washington county.

Philip remained at his home, working on the farm until his seventeenth year, when he went to Wellsburg, Brooke county, Virginia.

Philip and his older brother, Joseph, attended Jefferson Academy, Canonsburg, Pa., and Joseph there prepared for the ministry and afterwards became quite distinguished and was the first Episcopal minister who preached west of the Alleghenies. He was ordained by Bishop White in 1792, and he published his notes on the Indian Wars, &c.

At the age of seventeen, Philip, at Wellsburg, (then called Charlestown), attended school under the tuition of a Mr. Johnson, where he acquired a knowledge of the Latin language, and learned to render the prayers of his father into Latin, and to converse with his teacher in this language.

Philip wanted to see the world, and the only mode of transportation on the Ohio river, was by flat boats, and the chief trade was with New Orleans, which was shipped on these flat boats and floated down, and he took passage on one of these boats, rendering such services as he was able in consideration of passage for the trip.

While at Natchez, where the Spanish Governor then resided, Philip took a stroll about the place to see all that was to be seen and learned, and he met this Governor and they were not able to converse either in Spanish or English. Philip tried his Latin and found that they could make themselves understood.

The Governor was surprised to find a boy and a flat boat one at that, speaking Latin so fluently and he took him with him to dinner and was pleased to show such a scholar some attention.

After his return from this trip to New Orleans, he obtained several elementary law books, Blackstone's Commentaries, Bacon's Abridgement, Coke on Littleton and others, and began to study law and applied himself to master these works on the subjects treated.

AS A LAWYER.

The exact date when Philip Doddridge obtained his license to practice in the Courts of the State of Virginia, we are not able to give. At the first Court held in Brooke county in the spring of 1897, he was admitted to practice in that Court. He practiced in the various counties in the State and in the adjoining States, and in 1808 he was appointed the Attorney for the Commonwealth in Ohio county, and he was recognized by Hon. Joseph Johnson as one of the most prominent young lawyers at the bar in Harrison county in 1807 and 1808.

We have tradition for his ability as a counsellor, but we have history for his pre-eminence as an advocate. He was noted for his clear, rapid, comprehensive and analytical mind, he could at once grasp the controlling point of the case, and in a few sentences could so present the same that it became impregnable.

In Mr. Willey's sketch of his life, he tells an anecdote of his ability as an advocate.

Mr. Doddridge, with Mr. Ross and Mr. Campbell, both celebrated lawyers of Western Pennsylvania, were defending a landlord, at whose house a drover had stopped and while there was murdered, and an idler about the place assumed the character of an accomplice and turned State's evidence and testified that the landlord, with others, had done the murder.

While the character of the landlord had always been above reproach, here was positive evidence of an accomplice, and

notwithstanding the ability and accomplishments of Mr. Ross and Mr. Campbell, they had to confess that they had not been able to make any impression on the jury.

Mr. Doddridge was appealed to, to come to the rescue, and he felt that his client was innocent, and that the accomplice was a liar and a scoundrel, and that the jury must be made to know and feel it also.

Mr. Doddridge, leaning against the railing of the bar, apparently in a careless attitude, began his speech and said:

"May it please your Honor, and gentlemen of the jury, I am not about to make a speech, but to relate a simple fact. Down in Virginia, in my earlier days, there lived a celebrated lawyer by the name of Gabriel Jones. He was of the old school of Virginia gentlemen."

Then Mr. Doddridge proceeded to describe the said lawyer Gabriel Jones, with his cocked hat, his frilled shirt bosom, and waistbands, his powdered hair, blue coat, white vest and cravat, silk stockings and silver knee and shoe buckles, &c., and dwelled upon his peculiar style of man, that the jury could but see the greatest man, and one of the most eccentric ones, that had ever made a speech in a Court House, and one whose readiness and wit was beyond controversy.

Mr. Doddridge painted this great character so vividly that the appearance of the man could not have added anything to the distinct and clear comprehension of the jury and then he added:

"Well, gentlemen of the jury, when Fauquier county was made a county and held its first court, Mr. Jones went there, with other lawyers, to attend said court, and when he arrived he was met by all the other lawyers and especially the junior members, who wished to pay him some attention and manifest their respect for his great ability and prominence. On Sunday morning these young lawyers invited Mr. Jones to go with them to church to hear a celebrated but somewhat eccentric preacher, who was that morning to occupy the pulpit. They all proceeded to the church and found that the preacher had commenced his discourse, and as Gabriel Jones walked in, followed by the other lawyers, with his cocked hat under his arm, they reverently marched up the aisle. The preacher paused and pointing his long finger at the famous lawyer, said: 'Oh, you old sinner, with your cocked hat under your arm, your hair not white enough, but you must powder it—you come into the house of God after His services have com-

menced. I will appear as a witness against you in the day of judgment.' Mr. Jones stood looking his reprover calmly in the face, said in response, to him: 'Yes, I have no doubt but you will, for in the course of a long practice, I have ever found that the grandest rascal was the one to turn State's evidence.'"

The effect was electric, and it had the effect for which it was told, and gave the jury the idea of the value of the testimony of the accomplice, and they sustained the good character of the prisoner and acquitted him, and saved the life of an innocent and good man.

Not only did his practice extend over the adjoining territory in which he lived, but his services were secured on important cases in the highest courts of the land. He practiced in the Court of Appeals of Virginia, and in the Supreme Court of the United States.

Justice Story in 1822, speaks of Mr. Doddridge as "one eminent for his talents at the Bar."

Chief Justice Marshall said of Mr. Doddridge "as a lawyer he was second to none at the Bar of the Supreme Court."

HIS FAMILY.

Philip Doddridge and Julia Parr Musser were married at Lancaster, Penna., April 30, 1800. She died in 1859.

There were ten children, five boys and five girls. They were:

Jasper Yates, born in Lancaster, Pa., 1801, and he died in 1834.

John Musser, born in Lancaster, Pa., Dec. 3, 1802. He was the Cashier of the Branch of the Bank of Virginia, at Charleston, Kanawha, until the bank building was destroyed by fire, Sept. 13, 1862. He then joined the U. S. Army and was appointed Paymaster by President Lincoln, Nov. 26, 1862. After the war he was appointed Pension Agent by President Johnson, March 2, 1867. His wife was Catherine E. Klein, of Wellsburg, Va. She died in 1868 in Wheeling, and he resided with his daughters, Miss Margaretta and Miss Theresa, until his death, Feb. 4, 1892.

Benjamin Zaccheus Biggs, born in Wellsburg, Va., 1804. Was an invalid most of his life, and died in 1872.

Sarah Mary, Wellsburg, 1806.

Eleanor Sophia, Lancaster, 1808. Married Perry Plaskett, Wellsburg, and died in 1840.

Cadwallader Evans, Wellsburg, 1811. Was an Attorney at Law. Practiced in Kanawha, and died in Charleston, Dec. 27, 1885.

Julianna Adeline, Wellsburg, 1814. Married Mr. Ramsey.

Philip Alexander, Wellsburg, 1816. Married Ellen Scott, of Chillicothe, Ohio, and afterwards Sally Hansford, of Paint Creek, Kanawha county, where he lived and died.

Harriet Verena, Wellsburg, 1819.

Ann Ruth, Wellsburg, 1820. Married William Meek and removed to Canton, Ills., where she yet resides, and has assisted in the preparation of this sketch. Mrs. Meek is a remarkable woman, for one of her age; her hair retains its natural color, her eyesight almost as good as ever, and her hearing not affected in the least, and is exempt from the usual infirmities of age, and she spends most of her time in reading, which is her greatest pleasure. She is the only surviving child of Philip Doddridge.

In the year 1822, Mr. Doddridge was seized suddenly with some disease which suspended all animation and he was pronounced dead by his physicians.

It was as if there was a wheel in the machinery of his body had "caught on the center" and could neither go forward or backward; he could not live nor could he die. He said of it, that he was perfectly in his senses, heard and knew all that was going on, but was totally unable to move a muscle or make the slightest exertion. Supposing him to have died, those in the house proceeded to prepare him for burial, and the time set for the funeral services, but his wife did not believe him to be dead, and more than once were the burial services postponed. Those around her thought her crazed with grief and yielded for some time to her entreaties, and finally she begged for one-half hour more, and she, with the energy of despair, assisted by "Aunt Polly," a slave in the family, they worked with him, rubbing vigorously with brandy, finally she saw evidences of returning life, and greatly to the surprise of friends and especially of physicians, he was slowly restored to life.

Mr. Doddridge related the incident to one of the Judges of the United States Supreme Court, and Judge Story wrote the same to his wife, and the family knew of the truth of case.

IN THE LEGISLATURE OF VIRGINIA.

In the year 1815, he was elected to the House of Delegates

from Brooke County, the extreme north-west corner of the State.

Mr. Willey, in speaking of this event, says:

"North Western Virginia was then comparatively *terra* "*incognito*, and both its people and their political rights "found very limited recognition in the exclusive and aristo- "cratic sentiment of the tide-water and Piedmont districts "of the State.

"At this time, when Virginia was spoken of, it meant that "part of her territory lying East of the Blue Ridge."

But Mr. Doddridge was recognized for his ability, if not for his location, and he was placed on the Committee on Courts of Justice, and on Finances, and was also placed on the Committee on Taxes on Lands. He was an industrious, active and influential member and at once began his opposition to the arbitrary and oligarchial principles of the then existing Constitution of Virginia, and the people of the East. He began the fight and never relaxed his efforts until there was called the Convention of 1829-30.

He was again sent to the Legislature in 1822-23, and was placed on the Committees on Courts of Justice, On Finance, On Schools and Colleges, and on Roads and Internal Navigation.

He took a lively interest in the University of Virginia, as also in all other schools in the State.

In 1823, there was a bill pending to reduce the pay of members of the Legislature, which then was four dollars per day and mileage. He said that there were members in the House who knew their labors were worth four dollars per day; while there were others who knew themselves to be worth less—let them, like honest men, take less. He again called attention to the fact that there were three classes of society, the wealthy sons of luxury and ease, the middle class, whose comfortable support depended upon their exertions, and the poor, who had no means of public or private instruction and were therefore unqualified for legislative service.

The middle class constituted the yeomanry of the country, the members of the laborious profession and the vigilant mechanic—the backbone of the nation.

That the fruits of wealth were pride, arrogance, sloth and idle habits. They feel and know the weight and force of the middle class, and they are compelled to respect them. If they could reduce the wages so low that those of the middle

class could not serve in the Legislature they will succeed in reducing these members and influence and leave the control of the State in the hands of the wealthy alone.

Again, he called attention to the State Rights men, who feared the control of the country was going into Congress. He warned them against the disposition to practice parsimony in the State department when the General Government was so liberal for the same kind of services which would lead to respect the latter and to despise the former.

These ideas expressed as only Doddridge could, expanded and developed, brought to the attention of the people, the disposition of the wealthy to degrade those who did not enjoy the same blessings, and here continued the fight against the inequalities of the rights of the people under the then existing Constitution, and which fight was continued at this session also as it had been commenced in 1815.

Mr. Doddridge was again elected to the House of Delegates in 1828-29, and served on the same committees.

This session had to make provision for the Constitution that had been voted for by the people to amend the Constitution of the State.

Mr. Doddridge knew the questions that would come up in the Convention and which he desired to press, was the amendment to make the white population the base upon which the Legislature should be composed; the white basis of representation as it was usually called, and in order to present the same forcibly he desired a census taken, and he offered a Resolution to have it so done.

The Leaders of the dominant party were aware, as well as Mr. Doddridge, that this would show that the increase of population West of the Blue Ridge had been so great that it would secure to the West, together with the Valley people, if not the control of the Legislature of the State, it would be alarmingly close thereto.

The Resolution was defeated by a vote of 105 to 87.

The advocates of exclusive monopolies and privileges and control of legislative power were alarmed by the speech of Mr. Doddridge, and by the possibility of others like him from the West, where the Convention would meet.

About that time the sectional excitement between the North and the South, the nullification laws of South Carolina, and President Jackson's famous Proclamation, all had an effect upon the people of Virginia, and they feared anything

that did not leave them in the supreme control of the government.

Mr. Doddridge was of the political school of Hamilton, Everette, Marshall and others.

The avowed purpose of Doddridge in accepting a seat in the Legislature, was to secure an amendment to the Constitution of the State, which had to be inaugurated in the Legislature—so as to confer equal political and personal rights on all the people of every section of the State, and his speeches in and out of the Legislature had secured this Convention to be called.

CONSTITUTION 1829-30.

Previous to the Revolution, Virginia had no Constitution, unless it was the will and pleasure of the King or Queen of England, and as these claimed to rule by Divine Right, they also claimed that their will must be obeyed.

The colonies grew and began to feel their importance and this dictum of the King, together with the disposition to enforce it, did not settle comfortably on the American colonies, and the Virginians thought they had some rights that ought to be respected even by a King—hence there grew to be a difference of opinion between them.

This difference of opinion continued to grow, the King insisted on his Divine right to do as he thought best, while the people of Virginia insisted on the rights of the American citizen, even though a subject of England.

King George concluded to enforce his way of thinking, and began to send armed men and ships to teach a lesson to his subjects and they met our George with a few of those who dared to think otherwise. The Virginian was always great on paper and greater on oratory, and dearly loved the opportunity "to blow a big horn"—and they laid down a declaration of rights and principles for which they were willing to fight and die.

A few of these we might mention as:

All men are created equal.

All men by nature are equally free and independent.

Taxation without Representation is Tyrrany.

All power is vested in and consequently derived form the people.

No man or set of men are entitled to exclusive separate emoluments or privileges from the community, but in consideration of public services.

All men are created equal.
All men by nature are equally free and independent.
Taxation without Representation is Tyrrany.
All power is vested in and consequently derived from the people.
No man or set of men are entitled to exclusive separate emoluments or privileges from the community, but in consideration of public services.

And they utterly repudiated everything that did not look to the rights of the people.

They then called a Convention in 1776 and made a Constitution, by which the Legislature should be governed and directed.

Jefferson apologized for ths Constitution and said that we had not been in the habit of making Constitutions, and we did not know fully what was needed and that there was much left to the Legislature that should not have been. He wished that every man that fights or pays should have a right in the selection of the Law makers, and that the restriction of the right of suffrage as prescribed by the Constitution of '76 was wrong, and that taxation without proper representation was equally unjust.

He pointed out that the little county of Warwick had as much influence as some other counties that were three times as large, and composed of men and means more than three times as many as this little county.

Under this Constitution of 1776, the Legislature had been under the control of the Tide Water people and as the Piedmont county was filled up, they had absolute sway over the State.

The country, however, did not stop with the Blue Ridge, and the Shenandoah Valley soon filled up, and it was not filled with the people from the sacred soil east of the ridge, but were of some difference in their way of thinking of many things.

Neither did the Valley continue long to be the frontier, and they began to pour over the Alleghenies in to the West, and to settle on the Ohio river and the other rivers extending back into the country. But all this while the Legislature was composed of a very decided majority from the East, and the laws were all made and adopted to the interest and benefit of the Virginian on the East side of the ridge. This state of affairs began to create differences of opinion between the East and West equal in magnitudes as were those

that brought on the Revolution. Now it was that the people west of the Blue Ridge were wanting the principles enunciated in 1776 to be enforced and that all the people should have a voice in the government, as all had to fight for it, and had to pay to support it. They also wanted the majority of the people to control and govern it, and they wanted an equal representation in the Legislature, and they wanted many things which free-born citizens of Virginia had a right to demand.

So far they had not been able to obtain them. But they had succeeded in obtaining the call of a Convention, by which all these wrongs could be righted, and the State placed on a proper footing, with equal rights to all.

This Convention met in Richmond, Oct. 5, 1829. It was composed of ninety-six members, of whom there were eighteen representing the counties now in West Virginia, and they were:

Pendleton—William McCoy.
Monroe—Andrew Bierne.
Greenbrier—William Smith.
Pocahontas—John Baxter.
Jefferson—Thos. Grigg and H. L. Opie.
Hampshire—Wm. Naylor and Wm. Donaldson.
Berkeley—Elisha Boyd and Philip Pendleton.
Harrison—Edwin S. Duncan.
Cabell—John Laidley.
Kanawha—Lewis Summers.
Randolph—Adam Lee.
Monongalia—C. S. Morgan and E. M. Wilson.
Brooke—Alexander Campbell and Philip Doddridge.

These men represented districts, not counties.

From Augusta county were B. G. Baldwin and Chapman Johnson.

And from the East there were: Benjamin Watkins Leigh, Governor Giles, John Marshall, John Tyler, John Randolph, James Madison, James Monroe, Philip Barbour, John W. Green, Robert Stanard, and a host of others. Mercer, Tazewell, Mason, Powell, Cabell, and Taylor, etc.

It has been said by good authority that there was never a greater assembly of men that ever met.

Here was a body of men called together to settle the same differences between the citizens of Virginia, that had severed the relations between Virginia and England.

The people of the West were demanding the same rights that Virginia demanded from England. King George refused and the result was war, and the independence of the Colonies was the result—the separation from the mother country.

It was in this assembly that Philip Doddridge took his seat. He soon took the lead of the representatives from the West. They were united and he knew that they were with him.

The Valley representatives were also with him, and the entire delegation west of the Ridge were able men.

We cannot give the speeches in this article, nor the moves made to secure the rights the West demanded, but it is sufficient to say, that like King George, the East knew they had the power and they insisted on the Divine right to control. They formed a Constitution, and submitted it to a vote of the people, and the vote in the West shows how they were pleased therewith:

Brooke county voted unanimously against it.
Logan gave only 2 votes for it.
Ohio gave only 3 votes for it.
Cabell gave only 5 votes for it.
Tyler gave only 5 votes for it.
Harrison gave only 8 votes for it.
Pocahontas gave only 9 votes for it.
Randolph gave only 4 votes for it.

Hampshire and Jefferson were the only counties that gave a majority for it, and in the counties of West Virginia there were 1,383 for it and 8,375 against it. While in the entire State the total vote was 41,618, of which 26,055 were for the New Constitution and 15,563 voted against it.

We recommend all readers to read Mr. Willey's sketch of Philip Doddridge, to obtain a proper view of the work of that Convention.

There was no greater man in it than Philip Doddridge. When the different subjects had been adopted, it was necessary to formulate them into one body, and to do this there was appointed a committee, and Mr. Doddridge was placed at the head of it, and with him on the committee were Madison, Marshall, Leigh, Johnson, Tazwell and Cooke.

It has been said that while Mr. Doddridge was the leader of the opposition, yet no man was respected more highly, and on one occasion, when about to take a vote on an important

measure, John Randolph insisted on a delay until Mr. Doddridge came in, and when he came, the Convention rose to their feet to receive him.

It is here we would remark, that we are all proud of the fact that we were born in Virginia, and are proud of the title of a Virginia gentleman—one who is noble, generous, kind and fair and honorable to all.

In the Convention aforesaid, the representatives were all men that were known as Virginia gentlemen.

But in war, all things are said to be fair: and in politics, no matter how honest and upright the man may have been, he seems to leave everything behind him, even his religion, and clings only to that which he conceives to be best for him and his constituents, without regard to the rights of others.

These Virginia gentlemen were no exception to the rule, and in their refusal to deal fairly with the West, they laid the foundation for the State of West Virginia. The germ of the new State was then planted, and the difference between the West and the East grew from that day until the time of the civil war, when the opportunity was given for the West to separate from Virginia as Virginia had from England.

The West could not get up a war with the powers of Virginia and the impossible was not attempted, until the time came, when the powers were divided and the West separated from the mother country.

In the Constitution of 1829-30, the representation in the Legislature was arbitrarily fixed so that the East should have a controlling majority, thus: The House of Delegates shall consist of 134 members—31 members from the counties west of the Alleghenies, 25 in the Valley, 42 in the Piedmont district and 36 in the tide water counties. This gave the East 78 and west of the Ridge 56. The Senate was to have 32—of whom there were 13 to be selected west of the Blue Ridge and 19 east of it. The population of the country had nothing to do with it. When Congressmen were to be apportioned, for each 5 white men there were to be counted 3 black ones, so that the East secured all the Congressmen.

The right of suffrage was somewhat modified. A freeholder could vote, or the owner of a leasehold and a housekeeper who had been assessed and paid his taxes.

Not one word on the subject of taxation in the Constitution; all was left to the Legislature to fix that, and it is curious to see how they taxed everything except slaves; and all

those slaves under 12 years of age were not taxed and all over that age, no matter what they were valued at, ranged from one shilling 8 pence in 1793, to 47 cents in 1823, to 40 cents each in 1828, and in 1829 only 35 cents each.

While a mechanic who sold his own manufactures was let off with $10 annual license in 1829; a clock peddler paid $20; for a jersey wagon tax 75 cents; tax on each suit $1.50, and an appeal $1.50, and a certificate under seal of Commonwealth $2.00. This taxation bore hard on the West and nothing on the wealth of the East; and it was taxation without representation, as the West did not have that representation to which it was justly entitled.

IN CONGRESS.

Philip Doddridge was a candidate for Congress in 1823, and he was defeated by the Democratic candidate, Joseph Johnson.

In 1825, they were again candidates, and Mr. Johnson was again elected.

In 1829, they were again candidates, and Mr. Doddridge was elected.

He went to Congress in Jan., 1830, and remained until his death in 1832.

It was his work in behalf of the West in the Convention that elected him; the change of the sentiment of the people against the dominant party in Virginia.

In Congress, Mr. Doddridge was known as he was in Richmond, and his standing was there as high as it had been in the Convention.

Daniel Webster said of Philip Doddridge that he was the only man he ever feared to meet in debate. This was meant to give his estimate of the man, and no higher compliment could well have been given.

It is our purpose to give to the readers the facts in regard to the differences between Virginia in the East and in the West, and these differences will be more fully set forth hereafter, and to Philip Doddridge should West Virginia have given a monument to perpetuate the memory of one of her greatest founders.

Reference is made to the following books, for further particulars of the life of Mr. Doddridge:

American Pioneer, vol. 1, p. 134-5.

Genealogy of Gen. James Wells, by Mary J. Roe.

History and Government of West Virginia, by Fast and Maxwell.

Hayden's Virginia Genealogies.

Howe's Notes on Virginia.

Lewis' History of West Virginia.

Speech in the case of Samuel Houston, assaulting Mr. Stanberry, delivered in House of Representatives, May 9, 1832.

Remarks in debates in Congress, vol. 11.

Debates in the Virginia Convention, 1829-30.

Willey's Life of Doddridge.

Resolution on death of Mr. Doddridge.

Debates of Congress, vol. 12, 125.

The Legislature of Virginia by Act of Feb. 4, 1845, named a county after him and in honor of his name and fame.

West Virginia should know that in him and through his efforts, the resolution against Virginia's oppression of the West began, and culminated at the first opportunity to separate from the Mother State, and the memory of this great man should ever be kept alive, and a statue placed in the Capitol that would do honor to his name.

HENRY McWHORTER AND DESCENDANTS—COL. JOHN McWHORTER.

By L. V. McWhorter.

In the article on Henry McWhorter, published in No. 3, (July, 1901), of this Magazine, are a few errors that should be corrected.

First, the writer is his great grand son, instead of *great* great, as was stated.

Second, the foot note on page 65 is badly jumbled—a mistake of the printer.

It should read:

Photographed by Prof. G. F. Queen, for the writer in 1894, with Mr. Ned J. Jackson, a noted 49-er, who then owned it, sitting in the door. The cut is taken from "An Historical Account of the Scotch Highland Settlements in America." By J. P. MacLean, Ph. D., 1900.

His son Thomas, who died Dec. 28th, 1815, was the first buried in the McWhorter cemetery, and no other interment took place until 1822.

Henry died Feb. 4th, 1848, as stated.

Since the article was written, an old family record has been found which shows that it was about 1787 when he came to Hackers Creek, instead of 1784.

This places the building of the house three years later (1790), which still entitles it to the claim of being the oldest residence in that part of the State.

There is a fine hickory grove between the house and the pike on the west, grown from the nuts, planted by Mr. Ned J. Jackson, in the first week in October, 1857. The house as photographed, fronts the creek, on the north.

Henry was bound to a mill wright when a lad, and mastered the trade at sixteen years of age; then enlisted in the New York troops, patriotic army, and participated in the Battle of White Plains.

His military record at Washington shows that he was born in New Jersey, and was only a *resident* of Orange county, New York, at time of enlistment.

The place of his birth, as given in previous article, (also in "Border Warfare") was data taken from his grave stone, which is erroneous.

In 1783 he was married to Miss Mary Fields, a noble woman, to whom he owed much for his success in life. She was born 1761, died 1834.

It is due the memory of these old pioneers that brief mention be made of their descendants.

They had but three children—John, Thomas and Walter.

John*, the eldest, was born April 28th, 1784, and from early childhood was noted for his eccentricity and absent-mindedness.

Many are the amusing incidents related of him in this respect, one or two of which are here given.

Like most pioneer lads, he was fond of the rifle, and one morning was busy preparing to go deer hunting, when his mother requested that he first bring a pail of water from the spring near the forest surrounding their cabin home.

Hastily snatching a bucket he strode to the spring, oblivious to everything but his expectant hunt, passed directly by the spring and was soon buried in the deep unbroken woods of the hillside.

Cautiously wending his way through thicket and glen, soon discovered a buck standing partly concealed by intervening

*In after years familiarly known as "Colonel," "Judge" McWhorter.

brush, and while seeking a point more advantageous for a rifle shot, the irrepressible *bucket* pending from his arm, came noisily in contact with a log over which he was stepping, bringing him back to the realities of life with startling effect —*he had no gun.*

We could give other stories of like nature—of how, starting with bridle one morning to bring a horse from the pasture, mysteriously lost the bridle, spent hours in fruitless search for it, when at noon, his mother going to the spring house found it lying beside a crock of milk, where he had been down on his knees *licking the rich cream.*

Of his "bachelor day" efforts at tailoring, how after fifteen minutes spent in diligently sewing a button to his coat, let go the button only to see it fall to the floor.

Nor did this trait of character diminish, but rather grew with years and the cares of public life, as the following incident will illustrate:

By the road side near his home stood a large gum tree, whose branches hanging low over the highway, was in autumn, laden with dark rich looking berries (of such nausuating bitterness that, in comparison, gall is as honey to the taste), in appearance not unlike the sweet palatable fruit of the black haw, of which the Colonel was extremely fond.

One day riding under this tree with mind deeply engrossed with some case in law, the clustering berries so temptingly within reach arrested his eye, and without slacking his pace, hastily snatched a handful as he passed, emptied his mouth of a "quid" of tobacco and filled it with the supposed haws.

The effect can be better imagined than described, and unlike the traditional Christian, he invoked his God *after* the feast.

Early in life he studied law, and soon became a noted barrister of extraordinary ability. As a pleader his logic was hardly surpassed, and his judgment on contested points unerring. Not through his long career at the bar was he ever known to champion the cause of wrong, while his respect and reverence for Christianity even in his wildest moods was proverbial, and he has been known while engaged in a game of cards, to throw down his cards, push back from the table in disgust and in scathing words of indignation rebuke a boon companion for irreverent remarks and reflections on religion.

He was notorious for his bad penmanship, irritable tem-

per, * generosity and kindness of heart, and was ever ready with loosened purse strings to relieve the needy and distressed.

With a naturally wild and reckless nature to contend against, and without the advantages of an education, his genius and force of ability soon brought him into prominence and places of public trust.

When the war of 1812 broke out, with the spirit of liberty that prompted his father to take up arms against oppression in 1776; he raised a company of volunteers, offered his service to his government, was accepted and on the 16th of November, 1812, commissioned captain in Col. John Connell's Regiment, Virginia.

With his band of patriots he footed it from Weston, or Clarksburg (his residence) to Parkersburg, from thence to Point Pleasant by flat boat, where they were armed and equipped, then proceeded on foot to the Maumee river, where they campaigned or did garrison duty.

They were in the service until April 13th, 1813, at which time their term of enlistment expired.

The company returned home by the same conveyance that took them to the field of action. On the return trip one of the men, becoming exhausted, the Captain relieved him of his knapsack and camp baggage, adding it to his own burden.

Resuming his law practice ,he remained at his office in Clarksburg until the 17th of March, 1814, when he again enlisted as Captain under Colonel Wm. King, 3rd Regiment, United States Rifles.

He was afterwards made Colonel of Militia. (On May 2th, 1871, aged 87, he applied for and was granted a pension for entire time of his enlistment.)

He represented Harrison county in both Houses of the Vir-

---

*An amusing incident is related of him in this respect. While Prosecuting Attorney of Lewis county, he one day presented to the Court an indictment drawn up in his own hand writing, so intricate and unintelligible to the Clerk did it appear, that that dignitary's most scholarly efforts failed in deciphering its meaning, and the Colonel was called upon to "translate" it. Solemnly scanning the document for a moment, a puzzled expression came over his face which deepened, as, utterly unable to read a word of it, he was about to lay it down, when becoming irritated at the suppressed tittering of the entire Court, burst forth with: "Now, who in H—l wrote that. Why, the D——l could not read it." Upon being informed that it was his own production, he bravely declared that "anybody could read it," and proceeded to do so without further trouble. Members of the bar oftimes amused themselves and disturbed the dignity of the Court by stealing the Colonel's papers when deeply absorbed in an interesting case; "just to hear him rave," and seldom, if ever, were they disappointed.

ginia Legislature, and with his colleague, Dr. Jackson, originated the bill that created the new county of Lewis, (named for General Lewis, of Point Pleasant fame), stricken from Harrison.

He was for many years Prosecuting Attorney of Lewis and Braxton counties, and after retiring from the bar served as Judge of the Lewis County Court for several years.

When old age compelled his retirement from public life, he was ordained a local minister in the M. E. Church, in which capacity he served until his death, April 14th, 1880, in his 96th year; was buried on Rush Run, Lewis county.

He was never married.

Thomas, the second son, was a prosperous farmer, and a man of sterling worth to his community.

His only son, Henry, was killed in the Civil War, Union Army, in the fight in Pocahontas county, W. Va., Jan. 23, 1863. Early in the fight he fell badly wounded, and congratulated himself that it was his privilege to die as a true soldier in defense of his country. A few moments later he was shot through the heart, dying with a whispered prayer on his lips.

(Two of his sons were in the same company and saw their father killed. One of them, Fields, was made prisoner, and received injuries from which he died soon after the close of the war. The other son, John S., escaped, but was injured for life.)

One grand-son, line of Thomas, is a minister and doctor. Two other grand-sons, or great-grand-sons, are doctors.

The third and last son, Walter, was also a farmer, and under the old military law, Major of his regiment, (militia). Was a noted athlete, and never met his equal in wrestling or foot racing. Lithe and active, fond of daring sport, he would capture and toy with a living rattlesnake, dodging or avoiding its deadly and lightning-like blows, with all the ease and grace of an East Indian snake charmer.

No church in the community, his home, (the old homestead on McKenzie's Run), was for years, as with his father, the recognized place of public worship, and the free home of the itinerant minister and traveler.

His wife, Miss Margaret Herst, ever bore this additional hardship added to the burden of caring for a large family of children, without murmur or complaint.

Of his grand-sons, line of Walter, three were ministers and

orators of ability, two doctors, including one of the ministers, two of whom are still living.

Of his great-grand-sons, some live; one was a commissioned captain in Union army, civil war, who had a brother killed in same service.

Two brothers (including the captain) served in the West Virginia Legislature, one in both Houses, and was Speaker of the Senate, both have been, and are still, acting Judges, one in Circuit Court, the other on the Supreme Bench of the State.

Three others, two great, and one great-great-grand-son, same line, are lawyers of ability.

Several daughters of both Thomas and Walter lived to maturity and raised families of whom some have filled places of honor and public trust.

ROUND BOTTOM, MARSHALL COUNTY.

By Wm. Burdette Mathews.

Round Bottom, on the Ohio River, fifteen miles south of Wheeling, is a historic spot by reason of the fact that it was once owned by George Washington. The Father of his Country was an excellent judge of the fertility of its soil, and very clearly detected the unusual desirability of this river bottom. In the entry in his Journal for November 24, 1770, he says:

"We left our encampment before sunrise, and about six miles below it we came to the mouth of a small creek, coming in from the eastward, called by the Indians Split Island Creek, from its running in against an island. On this creek there is the appearance of good land. Six miles below this again we came to another creek on the west side, called by Nicholson, Wheeling; and about a mile lower down appears to be another small water coming in on the east side, which I remark, because of the scarcity of them, and to show how badly furnished this country is with mill-seats. Two or three miles below this is another run on the west side, up which is a near way by land to the Mingo Town; and about four miles lower, comes in another on the east, at which place is a path leading to the settlement at Red-stone. About a mile and a half below this comes in the Pipe Creek, so called by the

Indians from a stone, which is found here, out of which they make pipes. Opposite to this, that is, on the east side, is a bottom of exceedingly rich land. This bottom ends where the effects of a hurricane appear, by the destruction and havoc among the trees."

This bottom was so circular in form that it became known as the Round Bottom, although in pioneer times a post office was established there, known as Archville, and the present post office is called Thompson.

Under the royal decree and proclamation of 1763, certain lands were offered in payment of bounty to officers who served in the French and Indian war. Under this decree Washington obtained several thousand acres principally in the Great Kanawha Valley. He seems to have bought up the patents or grants to a number of his fellow officers to the amount of 587 acres and selected the Round Bottom land for which he was given the necessary patent by Benjamin Harrison, Governor of the Commonwealth of Virginia, Oct. 13, 1784.

Washington's estimate placed upon these lands, which are beyond doubt the most productive in the Ohio Valley, can be obtained from the following extract from a letter written to Presley Neville, of Pittsburg:

"Philadelphia, 16 June, 1794.

"Sir:

* * * * Besides these, (tracts of land) I have the Round Bottom, opposite Pipe Creek, about fifteen miles below Wheeling, which contains 587 acres, with two miles and a half front on the river, and of quality inferior to none thereon.

If the tracts are sold separately, I expect one fourth of the purchase to be paid down, and more than three dollars and a quarter per acre for the Round Bottom, and the tract of 10,990 acres on the Great Kanawha, knowing from my own view the extraordinary value of these tracts.

I am, dear Sir, etc.

G. Washington."

Another letter is extant in line with the above, written to Col. Archibald McLean, of Alexandria, Va., to whom he negotiated the Round Bottom sale, the deed executed by Geo. Washington and his wife, Martha, bearing date August 8, 1798. The consideration paid was $5,870.00, or ten dollars an acre. This was a remarkably good price for western

lands a hundred years ago. The tract, however, turned out to be fully twice as large as stated in the patent of Governor Harrison, and the deed of General Washington.

The title of the land was contested by one Cresap, who claimed to have settled upon it, but this was forever set at rest by two decisions by the Supreme Court of Virginia. See Cresap v. McLean, 5 Leigh 381, and McLean v. Tomlinson, 5 Munford 220.

These cases have often been quoted in the courts and also tend to render the Round Bottom as one of the historic spots of the Ohio Valley. The land descended to Col. McLean's two sons, Joseph and Horatio J. The only son of Joseph, Eri Humphrey, until recently owned the major portion of the southern half of this estate, and C. C. Mathews and Thomas Scott, of Moundsville, W. Va., purchased the H. J. portion, and are now vested thereof, being only third in the line of owners since Washington.

Options were taken during the present year upon this valuable property by a syndicate, the purported object of which was to erect a gigantic steel plant thereon, in opposition to the Steel Trust. A cash payment was made, but the options were forfeited, and now it is more probable that the historic spot will be purchased for suburban homes, rather than acquired for a manuacturing site, although the Ohio river, and the B. & O. R. R. system, the proximity of coal and gas, together with its favorable natural situation, afford peculiar advantages for commercial purposes.

Charleston, W. Va., November, 1901.

Book Notices.

Prof. W. P. Willey's Book.—There has lately been published by Prof. W. P. Willey, of the University of West Virginia, a work on the "Formation of the State of West Virginia," which gives much valuable history in reference thereto. It gives the facts that lead to the separation, and the manner of its formation, a collection of facts and circumstances that can nowhere else be found without much labor and research.

It shows satisfactorily that the cause of separation existed long prior to the war, and the war was only the opportunity, which was seized upon by the people to separate themselves from the Eastern part of the State. These things should be

known by the people of West Virginia, and there is no better way to know them than by reading this work. It is well written and interesting history.

History of Pocahontas County, by Wm. T. Price.—This is an interesting history of an interesting locality, and the Historical Society welcomes its arrival.

The counties of the State should each have such history written, and have some one that will make it a study to prepare them. Let the other counties fall into line and follow the lead of Pocahontas.

Misprints in the October Number.

We make the following corrections of misprints in the last number; others may appear, but can easily be corrected by the reader:

For Holderly read Holderby.

For Isaac read James Johnson, page 18, line 15.

For Peter Clone read Peter Cline, page 19.

For Csres read Ceres, page 22.

For Bunks read Burks, page 24.

For Stanley read Staley, page 27.

For Conrade read Conrad, page 54, line 17.

For Mary read Anne, page 55, note a.

For Warkins read Watkins, page 57.

For Morgan read Morrow, page 58, note c.

Omit Conrad, in note c, after Clarke, in first sentence and read it after Humphreys in the third sentence.

For 1061 read 1601, page 60.

For Nesbet read Nesbit, page 60.

For Arle read Orle, page 60.

For Heredically read Heraldically, page 61.

For Marlets read Martlets, page 61.

Contents of Former Numbers in 1901.

January, 1901.

The West Virginia His. and Antiq. Society.
Description of Charleston.
History of Early Settlers of Charleston.
History of the Seals of the State of West Virginia.
West Virginia's Struggle for Statehood.
West Virginia's State Debt.
West Virginia's Coal and Coke.
The Inventor of the Steam Boat a West Virginian.
John Laidley.
The Wild Pigeon.
First Settlers of West Virginia.
Visit to Washington at Home.
The Battle of Scary—1861.
Rumsey vs. Fulton.
Battle of Point Pleasant—Monument.

April, 1901.

History of Valley from Point Pleasant to Hinton.
The Birthday of West Virginia.
Ruffner Family—I. Peter.
Experience of a Kanawha Citizen During Civil War.
Personnel of Several State Administrations.
Major James Grant Laidley.
Great Kanawha River Improvement.
Appeal in Behalf of West Virginia Historical Society.
Minutes of the Annual Meeting.
Report of Secretary, and Librarian.

July, 1901.

West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society.
Pre-Historic Kanawha Valley.
The Oldest Town in West Virginia.
Ruffner Family—II. Joseph.
"Sword of Washington and Staff of Franklin."
Col. Andrew Donnelly, Sr.
Henry McWhorter—Pioneer.
Supplying an Omission.
Unique Tomb-Stone Inscription.

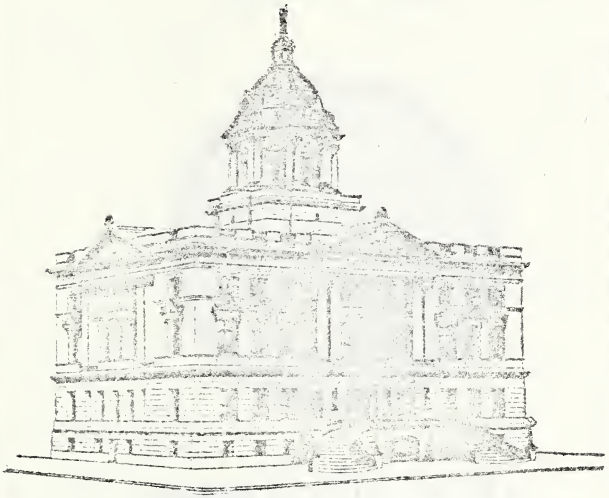
October 1901.

Resignation of Dr. J. P. Hale, Editor.
West End of West Virginia.
A Revolutionary Hero—Kirkwood.
Ruffner Family—III. David.
The Rutherfords.
Stone Pipe.
The Tables Turned—War Incident.
Kanawha Whipping Post.

VOL. 2. APRIL, 1902. NO. 2.

The West Virginia Historical Magazine

Quarterly.



(ROOMS OF THE WEST VIRGINIA HISTORICAL SOCIETY.)

CHARLESTON, W. VA.

Published by the West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society.

DR. J. P. HALE, President of the Society.
W. S. LAIDLEY, Editor,

Subscriptions, per year, - - - - $1.00
Single Copies - - - - - - - - .25

For Advertising, enquire of the Editor.

Vol. 2. APRIL, 1902. No. 2.

The West Virginia Historical Magazine

Quarterly,

CHARLESTON, W. VA.

Published by the West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society.

J. P. HALE, President of the Society.
W. S. LAIDLEY, Editor.

SUBSCRIPTIONS, per year, - - - - - - - - - $1.00
SINGLE COPIES, - - - - - - - - - - - .25
For Advertising, enquire of the Editor.

THE TRIBUNE COMPANY, PRINTERS,
CHARLESTON, W. VA.

CONTENTS OF APRIL (1902) NUMBER.

"The VanMeter Family," by Miss A. H. VanMeter.
"Addenda," by W. S. Laidley.
"Gabriel Jones, the Lawyer," by R. T. Barton.
"Colonel David Shepherd," by G. L. Cranmer.
"National Character of Battle of Point Pleasant, &c.," by V. A. Lewis.
"The Millers and Their Kin," by Dr. Jos. L. Miller.
"Colonel John Dickinson," by J. T. McAllister.
"The Ruffners, Henry," by Dr. W. H. Ruffner.
"Judge E. S. Duncan," by Henry Haymond, Esq.
"Pocahontas County," by Rev. W. T. Price.
"The Giant's Stone Axe," by Rev. R. D. Roller.
"Annual Meeting of West Virginia Historical Society."

The West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society.

A GLANCE AT THE VAN METER FAMILY IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.

Centuries ago a part of the province of Gelderland, in the Netherlands was called Meteren. The origin of the name is not known. It is suggestive of a personality and may have come from one or more of the French Huguenots who there found a refuge from persecution. Others have thought the people who left that town, or village, adopted Meteren as a surname, with the addition of "Van," which represents the preposition "from," as well as a mark of nobility. However that may be, the name has been borne by people who have distinguished themselves in religious and literary labors. Jacob Van Meteren, of Antwerp, caused the first complete edition of the Bible to be printed in the English language. This book was published in Zurich, in 1536, and was a great and expensive work. It is supposed that Van Meteren made the translations himself, employing Miles Coverdale to supervise the printing to guard against errors. In 1597, Joost Van Meteren, born in Antwerp, wrote a history of Holland. In 1875, Van Meters were living in that country, respected, educated and wealthy. The description of the family coat of arms, given in J. B. Rietstap's "Armorial General," is in French (the polite language of Holland).

Meteren (van) Hollande ecartele: aux 1 et 1-4 d'argent a une fleur de lis de gueules: aux 2 et 3 d'or a'deux fasces de gueules, accompagne de huit merlettes du meme, rangees en orle. Cimier la fleur de lis.

The baptismal and marriage registers of the Old Dutch Church of Kingston, Ulster County, New York (formerly Wiltwych and familiarly known as Esopus or Sopus), are said to

show Van Meterens, Van Maitres and Van Meters on their pages. They have been transcribed and edited but, unfortunately, the compiler Mr. Roswell Randall Hoos, has never answered any question on this subject. Abraham and Jacob Lamiater are among those who took the oath of allegiance in Ulster County in 1689. Delameters and De Lametres are found in Kingston as early as 1739. They seem to indicate a French branch, if not the original family.

In the lists of passengers on the ships of olden days the name of Jansen is conspicuous. It may have been to avoid confusion that Joost Janz (also written Jansen), j. m. (young man), of Meteren, in Gelderland, Holland, living then in what is now Marbletown, New York, came to write his name Joost J. Van Meteren. In 1682, he married Sara Du Bois, j. d. (young woman), of Kingston, in the same county, a daughter of Louis and Catharine (Blanshan) Du Bois. A touching story is told of the almost miraculous escape of Catharine Du Bois from burning at the hands of the Indians. (Letters of Rev. Allen H. Brown, 1899.)

Bommel, in the Netherlands, (province of Gelderland) was the birthplace, March 10, 1650, of Kreijn, son of Jan Gysbertsen Metrn (as he wrote his name). In 1663, he came with his father a widower, to New Amsterdam. Although the father used a different spelling, in the old records of Kings county, Long Island, and on the records of the First Dutch Church of Monmouth County, New Jersey, the name is spelled Van Meteren, Van Metra, Van Metere, and in other ways. The father was well-off, financially. He married a sister of Jan Van Cleef. In 1673, he was comfortably settled at New Utrecht, Long Island, and one of the magistrates of that town. In 1683, he was a deacon in the Dutch Church. There is a tradition that "Jan Guysbertsen Metrn" refused to take the oath of allegiance in 1687, and soon after went back to his fatherland. Children may have been born after the marriage to Miss Van Cleef but, as yet, they are an unknown quantity. His son, Kreijn Janse, took the oath of allegiance to the English government in 1687. He is then mentioned as a resident of New Utrecht. He was married September 9, 1683, to Neeltje (Eleanor), daughter of Jan Van Cleef and Engeltje Pietersen, residents of the same town.

Kreijn is on the assessment roll of New Utrecht from 1675 to 1709 when he removed to Middletown township, Monmouth County, New Jersey. Kreijn J. Van Matre (a later spelling) and his wife are among the first members and organizers of the Dutch Church of Monmouth. His name is entered on the church records as Kriin Jansen, and, in 1716, when elder, as Kriin Van Metra. He purchased a large tract of land in what (in 1899) are Holmdel and Atlantic townships. His first dwelling, a log cabin, was erected on the farm where William Jones now resides in Atlantic township. The old family burying ground is on this farm, only a part of the original tract, and in it he and his wife, and many others of the past generations of the Van Maters, are interred. Kreijn died March 10, 1720, and his wife January 1, 1747. They are reported to have had the following children:

Jan, b. April 26, 1687, died young.

John, b. April 17, 1688, at New Utrecht, L. I., m. October 17, 1718, Ida daughter of Ryck Hendrickse Van Snydam. He was a communicant in the Dutch Church in 1713 and his wife in 1731.

Ydtje (Ida), b. August 24, 1691; m. Jan, a son of Adrian Bennett and Barbery, his wife. Communicants in Dutch Church in 1731. She died September 13, 1774.

Gysbert (Gilbert), b. February 24, 1694; m. Maijke (Micha), daughter of Daniel Hendrickson and Kaatje Van Dyke, his wife. He was a communicant in the Dutch Church in 1721 and his wife in 1740. It is not known where he died or is buried.

Engeltje (Angelina), b. September 30, 1696; m. John Anderson.

Benjamin, b. January 22, 1702; m. Elizabeth, daughter of Jacob Laen (Lane) and Elizabeth Barkalow, his wife. Both were members of the Dutch Church in 1737. He died July 21, 1775, and is buried in the Van Mater cemetery.

Cornelia, b. May 24, 1704; m. Hans (John) Van Cleef.

Syrenius (Cyrenius), b. August 28, 1706; m. Abigail, daughter of Auke Lefferts and Maria Ten Eyck, his wife. Both are buried in the Van Mater cemetery. His grandson, Joseph C. Van Mater, called "big Joe Van Mater," is distinguished for freeing 100 negro slaves.

Joseph, b. in Monmouth County, February 5; baptized August 13, 1710; m. December 1, 1734, Sarah, daughter of Roelof

Schanck and Geesie, or Ghesye, Hendrickson his wife, Joseph Van Mater and his wife rest side by side in the Van Mater cemetery. A number of deacons and elders will be found among the different generations of this branch of the family. Joseph lived on the old homestead where Kreijn Janse first settled. The family graveyard is reserved forever for that purpose by the will of Joseph Van Mater. To this branch of the Van Maters, Monmouth County is largely indebted for the blooded stock of horses for which the county became celebrated during the first half of the nineteenth century.

John Van Mater (son of Kreijn Janse) and his wife had eleven children: Cryn Jans; Ryck (Richard); Gilbert; Jannetje; Neeltje; Marya; Eyda (Ida); John; Cornelia, or Catharine; Cornelius; Geertje.

In 1899, there were no male descendants of John Van Mater in Monmouth County, N. J., bearing the name of Van Mater. Kreijn gave real estate to his other sons; to John, he gave money; Kreijn died in 1720, but his will was not proved until March 21, 1729. Was the delay owing to John's absence?

Nearly twenty-eight pages of "Early Dutch Settlers of Monmouth County New Jersey," much of it in fine print, are devoted to the Van Mater family; genealogies, wills, etc. The book has been freely quoted here by permission of the compiler, Judge George Crawford Beekman, of Freehold, Monmouth County, New Jersey. The reader is referred to this valuable publication for fuller particulars. The children of John are mentioned because the claim has been made that the Salem County, New Jersey, and the Virginia Van Meters are descended from him.

Let us return now to Ulster County, New York, to look after Joost J. Van Meteren and his wife. Their daughter, Rebecca, was baptized April 26, 1686. It is improbable that she was the only child and here is a line of inquiry. September 3, 1704, Rebecca Van Meteren married Cornelis Elting, a son of Jan Elten and Jacomyntje Slecht. A sister and brother by the name of Van Meteren married two of the Eltings. Rebecca may have been the Miss Van Meteren. This theory would make the Mr. Van Meteren her brother. The indefinite Mr. and Mrs. Elting had seven children: two sons and five daughters. The fourth daughter had the interesting name of Youchamanchi; one of

her great, great granddaughters married Mr. William C. Van Meter, Sr., of Moorefield, Hardy County, West Virginia. The baptisms of three of the children of Cornelis Elting and Rebecca Van Meteren reveal the names of Isaak, Zara and Alida (Eleanor). Jan Van Meteren was one of the four sponsors for Zara in 1715. Who was this Jan Van Meteren? Sara married John Hite; Eleanor married Isaac Hite and Rebecca Van Meter, daughter of Isaac Van Meter, married Abraham Hite (three of the eight children of Hans Jost Heydt and Anna Maria Du Bois). As late as 1710-11, the names of Van Meter, Elting, Du Bois and Hite—all kindred—were found in Kingston, New York. In 1899, no traditions of the Van Meters were obtainable in the county; the name was not in the Kingston directory.

Between 1712 and 1714 the region now known as Upper Pittsgrove, in Salem County, New Jersey, and beyond it, began to be settled by people from New York State (including Long Island), New England and East Jersey. John and Isaac Van Meter, Jacob Du Bois and his sister, Sarah Du Bois, from Esopus, Ulster County, New York, located 3,000 acres of land, purchased in 1714, from Daniel Cox, of Burlington, New Jersey. They divided the tract by the compass; the Du Boises taking on the north side of the line, the Van Meters on the south side. The Van Meters continued to purchase until they owned about 6,000 acres; and most of the titles to the lands held by the present occupants go back to the Van Meter titles. The name, as first recorded in the Clerk's Office, at Salem, in 1714, is spelled Van Meter and, ever since, it has appeared the same way, with and without the capital M for Meter.

A first-class school, for that period, was established by the new arrivals, and religious services (presumably after the Dutch Reformed order) were not neglected. The first house for public worship stood near Woodstown. It went down soon after 1740. The date of its building and even the memory of its site have passed away. May 22, 1739, application was made by Isaac Van Meter to the Philadelphia Presbytery, in behalf of himself and others, for the establishment of the gospel in Pilesgrove. April 30, 1741, a Presbyterian Church was organized: 49 members signed the covenant beginning with Isaac Van Meter, Hannah (his wife), Henry Van Meter (their son), Sarah Van Meter

(their daughter). The Nienkirks, Du Boises, and others followed. (History of the Presbyterian Church of Pilesgrove, or Pittsgrove, in Salem County, N. J.)

John Van Meter's name does not appear in the covenant. Is he the Monmouth County John and where did he go after locating land in Salem County? What degree of consanguinity existed between him and Isaac? There is a tradition that the Monmouth County Van Maters and the Salem County Van Meters were related. They visited each other until Time, with its inevitable changes, brought newer and stronger ties.

At this point it may be well to take up the history of the Van Meters as it has been gathered by some of the southern members. James M. Van Meter, of Martinsburg, West Virginia, (an aged man), writes in 1898: "All I know I got through my father, from the original ones, and the old V.'s never lied. The first Van Meter (from New York), John, passed through here about 1725 with a tribe of Indians going to the south branch to fight the Catawba tribe. The Catawba tribe killed all of the northern tribe except John Van Meter and two of his Indians. When John got home, he told his sons if they ever went to Virginia, they must go to the Wapapatoma and take up land for it was the prettiest land he ever saw. That is the Indian name for south branch of the Potomac. About the year 1730, four of his sons came over. Their names were Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and John. John and Isaac got permission from Governor Gooch, of Virginia, to put settlers on 40,000 acres of land (Mss Journals of the Governor and Council 1721-1734, pp. 363-4). They soon sold out to Jost Hite. Abraham, my double great grandfather, died in 1780. He married Ruth Hedges, daughter of Joseph Hedges, of Annapolis, Md., and granddaughter of Sir Charles Hedges, of Oxford, England. My two grandfathers, Abraham and Jacob, were his sons. I have the history of my family down to 1880. My grandfather Abraham died December 29, 1838. He married Elizabeth Barns, a Scotch-Irish girl. My grandfather Jacob married Isabel Evans, a daughter of the Isabel Evans who fought the Indians at the Big Spring, a little south of Martinsburg.

"Isaac went to the south branch of the Potomac. He had about the third trial before he could settle, the Indians running him

away and burning his cabin. At last, when he succeeded and started his family, the Indians killed him.

"Jacob settled on the Opequon Creek, about three miles from my great grandfather Abraham. His descendants are here.

"John settled near Shepherdstown. Thomas Shepherd married his daughter Elizabeth."

Garrett Van Meter, of Moorefield, W. Va., believes, with B. F. Van Meter, of Kentucky, that the pioneer John, of Virginia, was a son of Kreijn, of Monmouth County, N. J., and a noted Indian trader. Alludes to his removal to New York and his explorations in Virginia at the head of a band of Indians. Upon his return, he urged his sons to lose no time in possessing the land. "Four of his sons: Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and John, came to Virginia, I think, in 1736, although some put it later and others at an earlier date. Abraham and John settled in Berkeley County, Jacob at the lower end of the south branch. Isaac in Hardy County. * * * Other Van Meters emigrated at the same time."

D. S. Van Maitre, of Parkersburg, W. Va., writes in 1878: "The first settlement of the Van Matres, or Van Meters, was in the vicinity of the present town of Martinsburg and was by John Van Meter and family consisting of five sons and six daughters (MSS Journal of the Governor and Council 1721-1734, p. 363). I feel pretty well satisfied that the Isaac associated with him in the 40,000 acres grant was his son, Isaac, as he had a son Isaac. * * * These Van Meters were from Salem, N. J. The Isaac V. M. who a few years later settled on the south branch of the Potomac could not have been this son of John, for I find that the Christian name of the wife of the former was Esther, while the name of the latter was Hannah."

Here a letter from J. P. Wilson, of Romney, to Miss Annie E. Van Meter (now Mrs. Williams) of Moorefield, W. Va., (1876) comes in appropriately. He states that Isaac, the pioneer, was twice married. "The second wife was the widow Sibley, who had one son, Henry Sibley, I think."

Dr. Foote, in his "Sketches of Virginia," states that "Isaac Van Meter, the founder of Fort Pleasant, came to the South Branch of the Potomac in the year 1740, in company with some Cayuga Indians and laid a tomahawk right on what has been

known for the last century as the Old Fields; he went back to his home and, in 1744, he moved there with his family."

Samuel Kercheval in the "History of the Valley of Virginia," published in 1833, when writing of the settlements on or near the Cohongoruton (ancient Indian name of the Potomac, from its junction with the river Shenandoah to the Alleghany mountains), gives the names of many of the first settlers on this water course and its vicinity. Among them, are Jacob Van Meter and brothers. He says the Van Meters were a numerous family and that they came from New York.

Judge Beekman in a private letter (1902) writes: The "fur trade" with Indians was very profitable and an easy way to make money and get confidence of the Indians. * * * Monmouth coast was prolific of shell fish out of which Indian money was made, or wampum. Many of our white people were engaged in making this shell money. * * * With the shell money anything could be bought of the Indians. As the red men were driven back from the coast, they became dependent upon the whites for their "belts of wampum." Thus the Indian traders from Monmouth and Long Island had an unlimited supply of Indian money and we find them slowly following up the Indians as they receded inwards."

A copy of the will of "Isaac Van Meter of the South Branch of Potowmach in the county of Frederick, Virginia," executed February 15, 1754, is recorded at Trenton, N. J. It was presented at court held in Hampshire county, Virginia, by Henry and Garret Van Metre, surviving executors, December 14, 1757. They qualified before the Salem county surrogate November 30, 1758 (where the name is written Van Meter). The will provides for his "dear wife, Hannah," and mentions the following children: Henry, Jacob, Garrett, Sarah (the wife of John Richman), Catharine Van Metre, Rebecca Hite (the wife of Abraham Hite), and Helita Van Metre. The lands in the province of New Jersey are to remain under their respective leases: at their expiration, to be sold at public vendue to the highest bidder; devises lands in Virginia, slaves and money. The children are to have the privilege of selling their land, but, in that case, the other children are to have the first offer, so they may keep it amongst them.

Garret Van Meter, born in New York, in 1732, was married to Ann Markee April 3rd, 1757. He was killed by the Indians near Fort Pleasant, Va., in April 1788. Three of his seven children lived to marry and raise families: Isaac, Jacob and Ann. The two sons married sisters, the Misses Inskeep. The daughter married Abel Seymour. He and Isaac Van Meter represented Hardy county in the Assembly when the constitution of the United States was adopted. Isaac had five sons and four daughters. Jacob, who is said to have been a Colonel in the war of 1812, had three sons who lived to raise families. Twenty-six years ago, some of the descendants from Isaac and Jacob had spread out into Maryland, Pennsylvania, Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Kentucky and Texas. The years, as they roll by, find them still increasing and farther and farther west.

A Van Meter (a daughter of Jacob and Louisa Van Meter, of Hardy county, W. Va.,) possesses the original location where the first settlement was made by Jost Hite. She literally lives in the "house that Jack built" (Col. John Hite). Her first marriage was to a Mr. H. R. Hack. After his death in 1887, she married Mr. Arbuckle, but her pride in her maiden name is not lessened.

The writer of this chronicle has no facts to present concerning Sarah Richman, Rebecca Hite, Jacob, Catharine and Helita Van Meter (five of the seven children of Isaac, the pioneer) or their descendants, except that the Hite descendants were among the first settlers of Kentucky.

Henry Van Meter seems to have retained his interest and lands in New Jersey yet he, also, is associated with Virginia. George Washington, while surveying for Lord Fairfax, in 1748, says he went to the South Branch of the Potomac to Henry Van Meter's. At another time, said he stopped at Mr. Van Meter's, near the "Trough." Henry died soon after his father (Isaac) and it is supposed that he was buried in the beautiful valley so dear to the family, because his grave cannot be located in Salem county. His will recorded at Trenton, N. J., is dated May 2, 1752; proved December 8, 1759. The following children are named in it: Joseph, David, John, Ephraim, Fetters, Benjamin, Jacob, Elizabeth and Rebecca. All the land, 2,400 acres, was left to the sons. Joseph was one of the elders chosen by the Pittsgrove Church, Salem Co., N. J., in 1762, to assist in improving the

methods for raising the minister's salary. He is said to have been a Colonel in the war of 1812 and a comrade of James Monroe. When the latter became President of the United States, Col. Van Meter spent two weeks with him in the White House. (This story comes from West Virginia.)

Little is known of Henry Van Meter's children, and their descendants, with the exception of the line of Benjamin, a child of the last wife, Mary Le Fevre, daughter of Erasmus Le Fevre, a French Huguenot. (This name was corrupted to Fetters.) Henry is said to have been married four times.

Benjamin Van Meter was born October 1, 1744, married April 1, 1766, to Bathsheba Dunlap, daughter of Captain James Dunlap, of Pittsgrove. Captain Dunlap died September 19, 1773. Her mother was Anne Hunter, daughter of Robert Hunter. One of the nieces of Mrs. Anne Hunter Dunlap, a Miss Purviance, married William P. Leigh of Virginia. Benjamin and Bathsheba (Dunlap) Van Meter lived on his ancestral estate in what is now Upper Pittsgrove township, Salem county, N. J. The husband was a ruling elder in the Presbyterian Church. He liberated all his slaves before his death, but some of them refused to leave him. He died October 15, 1826. His wife died November 7 1831. Their children were: James, Mary, Ann, Sarah, Erasmus, Fetters, Robert, Hunter and Bathsheba. Sarah and Fetters died in their infancy. James married Ruth Jones; Mary, Matthew Newkirk; Erasmus, Mary Burroughs; Robert Hunter was twice married, first to Rachel Buroughs, second to Sarah Leake Whitaker; Bathsheba married William Mayhew.

James and Robert Hunter Van Meter were physicians. They settled in Salem, N. J., and were identified with the First Presbyterian Church as founders and elders. The line of Dr. James Van Meter is extinct on earth, yet the bequests of that family to the First Presbyterian Church of Salem, N. J., will keep their memory green while time endures. Dr. Robert H. and Sarah L. W. Van Meter were the parents of eight children: Emma, Mary, Robert, James, Edward, Mason, Josiah and Harriet. Robert, James and Josiah died in their infancy. Mary married Enos R. Pease, of Connecticut; Harriet, Rev. R. J. Cone, of New York; Edward, Caroline Whitaker, of Deerfield, N. J. Mason (un-

married) is President of the Fenwick Club. Edward died January 4, 1875. His wife and daughters: Mary Caroline, Harriet F. and Anna Hunter, are all living. Shourds' "History of Fenwick's Colony," and Lewis' "History of the First Congressional District of New Jersey" give fuller genealogies, etc., than space will permit here.

ANNA HUNTER VAN METER.

Salem, New Jersey, March, 1902.

ADDENDA, BY W. S. LAIDLEY.

When it is known, or remembered, that the Van Meters were the first to make a move towards the settlement of the country west of the Blue Ridge, in the Colony of Virginia, the above sketch by Miss Van Meter, will be read with more than ordinary interest.

In 1709 the people of Virginia did not know that the Potomac river went through the "Great Mountains," as the Blue Ridge was then called, and had no knowledge whatever of said mountains except what they obtained at long range, as far as the eye could reach.

In 1716 Gov. Spottswood, moved by an unbounded curiosity, or in expectation of great promotion from his King, collected a great company of friends, with armed men, and Indian guides, &c., saying nothing of his provision for jolly picnic he proposed to make of the undertaking, and started in June, for the discovery of the land beyond and to see what was to be seen west of the Blue Ridge. There is a report of his travels and route, but it is not yet settled where the point is that he crossed the Ridge.

In Lewis' history of West Virginia, he gives the route, but as this account takes him into Pendleton county, West Virginia, on the top of the Alleghany, we fear to follow him so far. And as the said Governor discovered the river Euphrates which ran into Lake Erie, we are a little backward about taking his own account of his discoveries.

In 1721 the Virginians thought so little of the said country and so much of their own peace and safety that they entered

into a treaty with the Indians, by which they abandoned to the Indians all the territory west of the mountains and the Indians were to keep off the land south of the Potomac and east of the mountains. John Van Meter was an Indian trader, was well acquainted with the Indians of the north, and especially with the Delawares, and tradition says he had a band of Indians equipped at his own expense, which went with him on expeditions when required by him.

While it is true that William Penn tried to retain peaceful relations with the Indians, in 1728 the people within thirty miles of the borough of Philadelphia, were praying for protection from the ravages of the Indians by a petition to the Governor of Pennsylvania. John Van Meter takes with him Isaac Van Meter in 1730 and makes his way to Williamsburg, Va., and there meets Governor William Gooch and his Council of State, and while we cannot tell the conversation that took place, we know that the Van Meters wished to obtain the ownership and title to a large portion of the fair land that was situate west of the Blue Ridge, and that the Governor desired him to own it, or any one else, that would move thereto and reside thereon. Consequently there was not much time spent or words wasted before an understanding was reached whereby the said Van Meters were to have 40,000 acres of this choice land, the best in the world, and the Governor was to secure a living human wall between him and the savage Indians, in addition to the great mountains, so that both were made happy in the execution of the following paper, which speaks for itself:

At a Council held at the Capitol the 17th day of June, 1730:

Present

The Governour.

Robert Carter,	John Carter,
James Blair,	Rd. Hitzwilliam,
Wm. Byrd,	John Geymee,
John Robinson,	Wm. Dandridge,
————————	John Custis, Esqrs.

Several petitions being this day offered to the Board for leave to take up land on the River Shanando on the North West side of the Great Mountains, Robert Carter, Esqr. Agent for the Proprietors of the Northern Neck moved that it might be entered that he on behalf of the sd Proprietors claimed the land on

the sd. River Shenando as belonging to the sd. Proprietors & within the limits of their Grants it belonged sole to the Proprietors to grant the sd. Lands wch. Moven at his request is entered and then the Board proceeded to the hearing of the sd. Petitions.

On reading at this Board the Petition of John Vanmeter setting forth that he is desirous to take up a Tract of land in this Colony on the West side of the Great Mountains for the settlement of himself & Eleven Children & also that divers of his Relations & friends living in the Government of New York are also desirous to move with their families & Effects to Settle in the same place if a Sufficient Quantity of Land may be assigned them for that purpose & praying that ten thousand acres of land lying in the fork of Shenando River including the places called by the names of Cedar Litch & Stony Lick and running up between the branches of the sd. River to complete that Quantity & twenty thousand acres not already taken up by Robert Carter & Mann Page, Esqrs or any other lying in the fork between the sd River Shenando and the River Cohongaroola & extending thereto Operkon & up the South branch thereof may be assigned for the Habitation of himself his family & friends. The Governor with the advice of the Council is pleas'd to give leave to the sd. John Vanmeter to take up the sd first mentioned tract of ten thousand acres for the Setlmt. of himself & his Family. And that as soon as the petitioner Shall bring on the last mentioned Tract twenty Families to inhabit or that this Board is satisfied so many are to remove thither Leave be & it is hereby granted him for surveying the last mentioned Tract of twenty thousand acres within the limits above described in so many Several Dividends as the petr. & his sd. partners shall think fit. And it is further ordered that no person be premitted to enter for or take up any part of the afsd. Lands in the meantime provided the sd. Vanmeter & his family & the said twenty other Families of his Relations and friends do settle thereon within the space of two yeares according to his proposal. *MSS. Journal of the Governor and Council* (1721-1734.), p. 363.

Isaac Vanmeter of the Province of West Jersey having by his petition to this Board set forth that he & divers other German

Families are desirous to settle themselves on the West side of the Great Mountains in this Colony he the Petitioner has been to view the Lands in those parts & has discovered a place where further Such settlement may Conveniently be made & not yet taken up or possessed by any one of the english Inhabitants & praying that ten thousand acres of Land lying between the Lands surveyed for Robt. Carter Esqr the fork of Shenando River & the River Operkon in as many several Tracts or Dividends as shall be necessary ffor the Accomodation & settlement of ten ffamilies (including his Own) which he proposes to bring to the sd. Land. The Governour with the advice of the Council is pleas'd to order as it is hereby Ordered that the sd. Isaac Vanmeter for himself & his Partners have leave to take up the sd. Quantity of ten thousand acres of Land within the Limits above described & that if he bring the above Number of Families to dwell there within two yeares Patents be granted him & them for the same in Such Several Tracts & Dividends as they shall think fit & in the Mean time that the same be referr'd ffree from the entry of any other pson. *MSS. Journal of the Govenor and Council* (1721-1734.), p. 364.

No one will accuse these Dutchmen of being either fools, crazy or even reckless men. They knew more of the Indian character than did the Virginians or even the Pennsylvanians, they knew what could be or had been secured by treaty or contract in relation to the settlement of this country. We do not pretend to have seen the same in writing or of having heard of its execution, signed sealed and delivered, but we know no sane man would have undertaken this contract unless he had had some assurances of his peaceful holding of the land he had contracted to place his family and the families of his friends upon. It was not intended to go upon the land and enter upon a war with the Indians with these forty families. This historic sketch brings us down to 1730, and will naturally lead us to the subsequent events that took place under and by virtue of the above contract in relation to the settlement of the Shenandoah Valley.

GABRIEL JONES "THE LAWYER."

On the 9th day of November, 1901, the handsome new Court House of Augusta County was dedicated, and as a part of the ceremony a large marble tablet placed upon the wall of the court room, was unveiled. This tablet was commemorative of five of the founders and most distinguished citizens of the county, and was erected by the Daughters of the Revolution, whose patriotic services are doing so much to preserve the ancient land marks of our country's early history.

Among the names on the tablet is that of Gabriel Jones "the

GABRIEL JONES.

King's Attorney," or as he was afterwards generally known "the Valley Lawyer."

The writer, because he was the great grandson of Mr. Jones was selected to make the address on that occasion, which had special reference to the unveiling part of the ceremonies and what is written here is largely a reproduction of what was said then. If like Mark Twain at the grave of Adam I had felt any inclination to "tumultuous emotions" the lapse of about a hundred years since the old gentleman was buried, enabled me to suppress them. And as the same lapse of time fairly entitles a grandfather who in his life was so much of public property, to

be considered now as belonging as much to the public as to his descendants. I felt then no embarrassment about speaking of him as I feel none now in complying with the request that I write this article about so unique and interesting a character.

Of the early settlement of the great Virginia Valley it will be remembered that Governor Spotteswood and his jolly comrades, with their extraordinary supply of champagne and other fine wines, came over Browns Gap in 1716 and drank the healths of British Royalties to every degree and generation (a separate health to each) on the banks of the "Sherando."

Then from the noise of their cheers and salutes the woods lapsed again into silence which remained almost unbroken for sixteen years. But about 1732 the waters of immigration broke loose and flowed into the valley with a full and continuing stream. This was principally into the northern or lower end, but the immigrants came also in considerable bodies through the many Gaps in the Blue Ridge from the eastern side of the Colony.

So rapid indeed was immigration into the valley that the House of Burgesses in 1738 authorized the formation of the two counties of Frederick and Augusta by the same act, only stipulating that the actual organization of the counties should be deferred until there should be "a sufficient number of inhabitants for appointing justices of the peace and other officers, and electing courts there for the due administration of justice."

This condition was declared to exist as to Frederick County in 1743 and as to Augusta in 1745; at which times respectively those two counties were formally organized. The records of the session of the County Court of Frederick held on the 13th day of January, 1743-4 (old and new style) the first session of that court having been held on November 11th, 1743—show that Gabriel Jones appeared and took the oath and qualified to practice as an attorney at law.

The next session of the court was held February 11th, 1743-4, and it was then ordered that Gabriel Jones be recommended to the Governor as a suitable person for King's Attorney which corresponded to our present prosecuting attorney. He was then not yet nineteen years of age, and he was but little past the age of twenty-one when on December 9th, 1745, the same recommendation was made of him by the County Court of Augusta County.

He was duly appointed and served many years in that capacity for both Augusta and Frederick counties when those two counties made up all of Virginia which was west of the Blue Ridge mountains.

His parents, John and Elizabeth Jones, were English people from the north part of Wales and must have come to this country in or shortly prior to the year 1720. They settled at Williamsburg and their first child, a girl, was born within the College precincts on August 13th, 1721.

Gabriel Jones was born May 17th, 1724, on a farm about three miles from Williamsburg. John Jones, the father, died prior to the year 1727, and shortly afterwards Mrs. Jones, with her small family, returned to the old country, the parish register of St. Giles-in-the-fields in London showing that her daughter Elizabeth was baptized there on February 20th, 1727.

Gabriel was admitted to the Blue Coat School, which is still standing and conducted pretty much as it then was, in April 1732. There he remained for seven years until he was fifteen years of age, when he received his discharge from the school and went at once into the service of a Mr. John Houghton a solicitor in chancery of Middlesex county, with whom he studied law.

This was in 1739, but how long he remained there I have no means of knowing. About that time his mother died, but what became of his sister I do not know. A younger brother named John came back with Gabriel to America, and he had a son named John Gabriel who was killed by the Indians during the revolutionary war while on a very daring expedition to the Ohio river.

We have no account of how young Jones spent his time in England when he was supposed to be studying with the solicitor, nor do we know how long he remained there nor exactly when he came back to America.

He seems to have supposed that he was related to the English family of which Sir William Jones was a distinguished member, for in the colonial days, when such things were fashionable, he used the coat of arms substantially, and the same motto with that family.

But whether he had any aristocratic connection or not, he had very little or no money; for among his effects at his death was found a few English coins wrapped in a paper on which was writ-

ten in his own hand—"this is the patrimony I received from my mother: from my father I received nothing." In later years when he was a very rich man, the family tradition says that when one of his grand-children was disposed to put on airs, he would exhibit these coins and with the frankness of speech used by most of his contemporaries, and by Mr. Jones especially, he would say "this is what you came from, damn you."

Exactly when he came from England we do not know, but he seems to have settled at first in Frederick county, and was a resident there when, at the age of twenty-one, he qualified to practice law in Augusta.

Thomas Lewis was the surveyor of Augusta county, and I think owned the land of the present Lewis family near Port Republic. He married a Miss Strother from either King George or Essex county. She had two sisters, one of whom was a widow, after a single month of married life to a Mr. Morton. She was willing to be consoled and she married Mr. Jones on October 16th, 1749, Rev. James Keith, the ancestor of my friend and kinsman, Judge James Keith, of the Court of Appeals, performing the ceremony. John Madison, the father of Bishop Madison, married the other sister.

William Strother Jones, the grandson of Gabriel Jones and my grandfather, on January 31st, 1806, married Ann Maria Marshall the granddaughter of Rev. James Keith (whose daughter was the mother of Chief Justice John Marshall) and who performed the marriage ceremony for Gabriel Jones, and thus fifty-seven years after that event the races of the groom and parson were merged.

Most probably because of its proximity to the home of the Lewises, Mr. Jones on August 8th, 1751, bought the farm on the opposite side of the river, which I have always known of as the Strayer farm. There Mr. Jones lived from the year 1753 and there he died and was buried. At least he sold his Frederick county farm in the year 1753, and it is supposed he removed at once to Augusta as he seems never to have lived at his other place in Frederick, known as Vaucluse, where his grandson afterwards lived and where my own mother was born.

In the years 1757, 1758 and 1771, Gabriel Jones represented the county of Augusta in the House of Burgesses. With his

election in the year 1753, quite an interesting event is associated Mr. Jones was a very intimate friend of a young man named George Washington, then about twenty-six years old, and who had made a name for himself in connection with the defeat of Braddock at the battle on the Monongahela river. Washington had aspired to membership in the House of Burgesses from Frederick county, but had been certainly defeated once, and it is thought twice for the place.

In 1758 he was on the second expedition to Fort Duquesne, but it was supposed that this affair would soon be over, and as he was looking forward shortly to be married to the widow Custis, it was very evident that he had other reasons for desiring to spend the winter in Williamsburg, than merely as a representative in the colonial legislature.

The canvas in Frederick, however, had become quite active, and the result looked so doubtful that Mr. Jones went down to Winchester to help the interests of his friend, who was kept away himself by his military duties, and so he went into the fight, and in popular parlance he "took off his coat."

I am indebted to Mr. Paul Leicester Ford for a copy of a very interesting letter written at the time by Mr. Jones to Col. Washington, and as it has so much of a modern political nature in it I cannot forbear quoting it. It is addressed:

"On his Majs service

To George Washington, Esq."

It is endorsed in Washington's handwriting—

"From Gabl Jones Esq. 6th July 1758."

It reads as follows:

"Dear Sir:

The Writs for Election being so long on their way that it was ye 4th (our court day) before they come to ye Sheriffs hands, made it impossible to have ye Election before the 24, as ye Law directs 20 days between ye time they come to hand & that day. I am sorry to find that ye people and those whom I took to be ye friends in a great measure change their sentiments; & now raise doubts on Mres that seem to be clear with them before, this is ye consequence of yr back being turned—yr Potomack people I am afraid will not be steadfast, they talk now of the Old Burgesses. West has been two days with them & intends to be very

busy until ye time comes. Colo Martin publickly accused him with some low transactions which the other could not clear up, & stands condemned by some of his best friends for such scandalous proceedings—the whole Mrs is to be laid open the day of the election. Colo G. Fairfax will be up & am in hopes will make a great Alteration upon Potowmack the disturbance in Colo Hite's neighborhood is occasioned by ye Rangers being garrisoned—if Mrs removing this Obstacle could be consistent, with ye Interest the County & your Duty should be heartily glad there is now ye Carolina force in ye Fort.

The late blow in Massa notting & the Harvest will prevent a great many from being down, this I don't think will prejudice you so much as my other friend, his Interest I think declines among the Quaker's where I imagine yours is pretty good, in short affairs are totally changed & may be many times so yet before ye day, your being elected absolutely depends on your presence that day, this is ye opinion of every thinking frend, & therefore must in ye most pressing manner desire it. it happened very unluckily that the writ was so long delayed as it was the Case in Augusta so that both Elections will interfere, however as I have undertaken to serve you no Consideration shall deter me from it. I shall give up mine in order to be at your's, where if possible I hope you'l be. I think I have said everything that ye little time I have to spare allows. Only be assured of the best endeavors of

Dr Sir

Yr Most Obdt Hs

GABRIEL JONES.

Winchester July 6th '58.

P. S. pray tell Capt. Stewart I shall kindly think of him till he returns."

Washington was elected, altho his associate, Col. Martin, only led the Mr. West, of whom Mr. Jones had such a bad opinion, by about 40 majority. It is gratifying to know that the absence of Mr. Jones from the county, did not prevent the good people of Augusta from again returning him as their Burgess.

Washington acknowledged his obligation to Mr. Jones in the following letter:

"Camp at Fort Cumberland.

Dear Sir

Permit me to return you my sincerest thanks for your great assistance at the late election, and to assure you that I shall ever retain a lively sence of the favor. I am extremely sorry that you neglected your own election in Augusta by this means, but I hope you are secure in Hampshire."

It is worthy of note that among Washington's accounts is a statement and receipt for his expenses at the Frederick election,

the amount of which, calculated in English currency was about $195.00, and the principal item of which was "a hogshead and a barrel of punch, thirty-five gallons of wine, fifty-three gallons of strong cider and dinner for his friends."

The commencement of the revolution in 1776, found Mr. Jones fifty-two years old—too old for active service. His only son, however, entered the service and rose to the rank of Captain. He died soon after the Revolution, leaving an only child who was my grandfather. Gabriel Jones was elected to the continental congress from the Augusta district on June 17th, 1779, and the journal of the house of delegates of January 23, 1778, shows that

he only lacked 16 votes of being elected one of the judges of the General Court. The successful candidate was Paul Carrington.

In 1777 Rockingham county was cut off from Augusta and carried with it the home of Mr. Jones on the Shenandoah river. From that time he ceased to be a citizen of Augusta, but he remained identified with the county by his large law practice and his membership in congress.

In 1788, he and his brother-in-law, Thomas Lewis, were elected members of the constitutional convention from Rockingham county. He was a strong advocate of the adoption of the Federal constitution, a stalwart hater of Thomas Jefferson and all that he stood for, and even down to motions to adjourn he seems to have always voted with the friends of the constitution.

All his life long Jones was a close friend and admirer of Washington. He was also a close friend of Lord Fairfax, their strong political differences not affecting this relation, and at the death of Fairfax he became one of his executors.

It happened too that in 1752, Jones and Fairfax were elected at the same time vestrymen in Frederick parish.

Although this fact does not prove it, and you may think that he had a somewhat eccentric way of showing it, yet it is true nevertheless that Mr. Jones was a religious man and a member of the church of England.

His conspicuous fault was his high and uncontrollable temper, and his unreserved denunciation of people he did not like or approve of. To swear in those days was a very common vice in which both Washington and John Marshall rather freely indulged nor was church membership regarded as any special hindrance to the exercise of such a habit.

He would call a spade a spade, and he perhaps would have enjoyed, tho' he might not have profited by the story told of the Bishop of Rippon, who when rebuking a profane man for swearing, received the reply that he "always called a spade a spade." to which the Bishop said, "but that is no reason why you should call it a damned old shovel."

Mr. Jones' family have had handed down to them the story of his address to the voters in his candidacy for the convention of 1788, when upon being informed that some of the sovereigns only intended to vote for him because he was the brother-in-law

of Mr. Lewis, he replied from the stump that he "scorned to receive the votes of such —— rascals," filling up the blank with an emphatic word of six letters.

A letter in his hand writing lies before me, to which Mr. Jas. A. Waddell has referred in his annals of Augusta county, from which I must quote a few characteristic sentences: It is addressed to his very dear and only son Strother, and he says:

"I am sorry since —— behaved so much like a scoundrel you did not treat him as such, the infamous raskell little knows &c."

But after lambasting this and another acquaintance in somewhat the same style, he thus concludes his epistle.

"I am extremely sorry to hear of Fanny's bad state of health take care of her, she is a jewel worth preserving. God bless her and the child. I have sent him a little cup to drink out of."

It is but fair to the memory of Gabriel Jones that I should add to these extracts the following, in order that I may show that when he was not in anger how gentle and wise was his rule of life.

This is from a letter written October 1st, 1790, to his widowed daughter-in-law Fanny, shortly after the death of his son, Capt. Strother Jones—

"It gives your mother & me infinite satisfaction to hear our little boy" (the grandson) "has got to school & that he takes delight in his books. Nature I think has been kind to him in giving a sufficient portion of parts & good disposition, so as to be an honour to himself and credit to those he sprang from. My sincere wish is that of the Poets' 'Keep him innocent—make others great.'"

The next letter is written to the grandson above referred to nearly twelve years afterwards—

"Rockingham Jany 26 1802.

My dear Strother

This is only to inform you that Mr. Carthrea's waggon intends to set off for Fredericksburg to-day or tomorrow and carries with him the Box containing the 7 maps I promised you. On the receipt of this you are to write to Mr. Patton where you want to have them in Stevensburg. I forgot the mans name. We are all here much as you left us—hearty & well. I hope ere this you have got to your new place of abode. Lose no time to prove

yourself. Remember you are drawing fast towards the age of manhood & if you should meet with anything that may not be so agreeable as you could wish pass over it without notice & be obliging to the family where you be. You must expect many rubs through life, but a firmness of mind will overcome all. Our Love attends your mother & respects to the Doctor and all his family & mine to your friend & tutor Mr. Burnet to whom you must pay all perfect obedience.

I am my dear Strother
most affectionately your
grandfather
GABRIEL JONES.

Mr. Jones was a great lawyer, and commencing at least with his qualification in Augusta on December 9, 1745, he remained in active practice close up to the time of his death at the age of 82 in the year 1806. I was surprised to learn that at its first term in 1745 the Augusta court had a large docket, but the history of the time shows that it was an age of great speculation, great growth and improvement and great gains to the legal profession. From his professional gains and careful investments Mr. Jones accumulated a great fortune and took fine care of it, leaving a large estate at his death. His widow, a widow for the second time, survived him sixteen years and died at the age of 97.

I do not believe that I could better conclude, what I have tried to make a truthful portrait of this distinguished citizen of Augusta, than by quoting what was written of him by the late Hugh Blair Grigsby.

Before quoting what Mr. Grigsby says of him however I call attention to his personal appearance as indicated by the portrait which accompanies this sketch. He was a small man and after the fashion of the day he wore a wig and being quite punctilious about his dress he is painted as he is written about, as ordinarily dressed in ruffled wristbands, a rather clerically cut coat and the white stock which were the fashion of the day. He lost an eye early in life and is said to have always worn a bandage over it. If the remaining eye was as keen as it appears in the portrait from which the cut is taken it may be that it was well that he had but one.

Mr. Grigsby says of him:

"He was of small stature and of a nervous temperament, and having lost his right eye in early life, he always wore a shade to conceal the defect from public observation. He is represented in a portrait at 'Vaucluse,' the seat of his late grandson, as dressed in the full toilet of a gentleman of the old regime, the shade over his eye, and as having a face shrewd and attenuated, and indicative of a high temper. Indeed, with all the discipline of a long life, with all his respect for those restraints which his position at the head of the bar, as the head of a family in an orderly, moral and even religious society, and as a gentleman punctilious in dress and demeanor, he could never turn the cup of provocation from his lips, nor restrain the outbursts of a temper terrible to the last degree. Even in the presence of the court his passions flamed wildly and fiercely. He was the first, and for a long time the only, attorney who practiced in Augusta county, and was generally known as The Lawyer. The road by which he travelled to Staunton was called the Lawyer's Road. An incident which occurred in Augusta court will serve to show the peculiar temper of Jones, and, at the same time, the temper of the court toward him. He was engaged in a case in which the late Judge Holmes was the opposing counsel. Holmes was mischievous and witty, and contrived to get Jones into a furious passion, when he became very profane. After hearing Jones for some time the court consulted together in order to determine what steps should be taken to preserve its dignity. To think of punishing Lawyer Jones was out of the question; so the presiding judge gave it as the decision of the court, "that if Mr. Holmes did not quit worrying Mr. Jones and making him curse and swear so, he should be sent to jail." Withal he was a most skilful and learned lawyer, indefatigable in maintaining the interests of his clients, and most successful in winning verdicts.

"His politics were pitched to the same high key with his temper. He had no fears of a strong government which was, at the same time, a representative government. He thought that the principal defect in popular institutions consisted in their weakness, and that vigor in the administration was the true and the only means of sustaining successfully a republican system.

"He warmly supported the Federal constitution, and was to

his last hour a thorough, open, and un-compromising Federalist. Looking upon every honor to be conferred upon him as a mark of disgrace if founded on an erroneous view of his opinions, he expressed himself on public occasions with a freedom and a harshness that gave great scandal even to men not ordinarily squeamish. Thus, when he was a candidate with Thomas Lewis for a seat in the present convention, though his opinions were everywhere known in the valley, having heard that some of the voters whom he disliked intended voting for him out of regard for his brother-in-law, he declared from the hustings on the opening of the polls, "that he would not receive the votes of such damned rascals." He had no concealments, in public or in private. He was never worse than he appeared to be. In the relations of private life he was punctual, liberal, and honorable. The man never lived who doubted his integrity. By strict attention to the duties of his profession he accumulated a large estate. In pecuniary matters he was stern, but just. He exacted indiscriminately his own dues from others but he rendered the dues of others with equal exactness. In an age of wild speculation, he would never buy a bond under par, nor receive more than six per cent. for the use of money. Hence, by the aid of his large capital, his influence was extensive; and the influence was invariably wielded in behalf of suffering virtue, of sound morals, and of public faith. He kept an account of all his expenses; and when engaged at his own fireside, or at the firesides of his friends, as was the fashion of the times, in a game of cards, he noted his losses and his gains; and a regular account of his luck, kept through his whole life, was found among his papers. When we regard his protracted career, and the influence which his strict veracity, his incorruptible integrity, and his fearless assertion of the right, exerted on the public opinion of a young and unsettled country, rapidly filling up with the waifs of a various emigration, almost beyond the reach of law, his peculiarities, though ever to be pitied and deplored are softened in the contemplation."

Lawyers and laymen alike may well feel an interest in the revival of the memory of this strong old character. In such reminiscences we best read the real history of the times and learn of the country as it was in the transition stage from Colony to State.

R. T. BARTON.

COL. DAVID SHEPHERD,

FIRST LIEUT. COMMANDANT OF OHIO COUNTY, VIRGINIA.

By G. L. Cranmer.

Among those who contributed by their efforts and labors to the development of Ohio county in the earlier years of its history it would not do to omit the name of Col. David Shepherd the first Lieutenant Commandant of the county which at the time of his administration contained nearly five times the number of square miles than it now contains and out of which was carved the present counties of Brooke and Marshall.

Not being aware of the existence of any biographical notice of the life and character of Col. Shepherd I was impelled to make search among the records of the court meagre though they be and also to make enquiries among some of the older citizens of the county with a view of obtaining information concerning one who figured quite prominently during our revolutionary period and yet concerning whom only a limited account can now be ascertained with any degree of certainty.

The writer expresses his regret that many persons having data in their possession concerning the settlement of our western borders or who have gathered from their ancestors many interesting items and traditions bearing on early times, are so indifferent as to their value and importance and hesitate to make them known. There is much of this buried history in the form of diaries, letters and documents which is too often regarded by their possessors as mere rubbish and which is stored in attics and other places and much more which has been destroyed. These general remarks apply in an especial manner to the subject of our sketch to the consideration of which after the foregoing digression we now return.

David Shepherd was the son of Captain Thomas Shepherd and was born in Shepherdstown, Virginia, in the early years of the eighteenth century. His father was the proprietor of the land on which the town of Shepherdstown was laid out and from him it took its name. David was a bold, active and adventurous spirit, of gentle disposition, equable in temper, just in his dealings with his fellow man, and generous and hospitable in character.

The frequent return to his neighborhood of land jobbers and adventurers, who dwelt upon the advantages of the cheap and fertile lands and the encouraging prospects of the western country inflamed the desire of the young man to visit this Eldorado and see for himself.

Obtaining the consent of his father, he promptly set forth upon his journey, and after many days of travelling and encountering many hardships and dangers he arrived at the place of his destination where he received a warm welcome at the hands of the settlers, among whom he decided to cast his fortunes, and soon became a prominent actor in the stirring scenes of the day. His sterling qualities of head and heart especially endeared him to the leaders as his excellent prudence and judgment caused them to give great weight to his opinions and conclusions.

Shortly after his arrival he obtained by patent or purchase one thousand and sixty acres of choice lands at what is known as the "Forks of Wheeling" and adjoining the same. The portion retained by him at the time of his death, he disposed of by will, to his wife, his three daughters, and his son.

In compliance with an Act of the General Assembly of Virginia the landholders of Ohio were authorized to meet at the cabin of Ezekiel Dewitt on the 27 day of December, 1776, with a view of selecting a committee to have charge of county affairs, as well as to make choice of a place where court should be held. The result of the conference was that Black's tavern on the waters of Short Creek was selected as the most eligible location for the county seat. At the same time the name—West Liberty—was substituted for that of Black's tavern. This is said to have been the first town organized west of the mountains in the Ohio Valley.

The first session of court was held January 16, 1777, and among other business transacted was the recommendation of a suitable person as Lieutenant Commandant of the county. Col. Shepherd was unanimously recommended for the position. The Governor promptly acted upon the recommendation and commissioned him as such. At the June term of court of the same year Shepherd appeared and took the oath of office. In the interval between the June term 1777 and the April term 1778, owing to the cruel and relentless warfare waged by the savages

and the consequent disturbed condition of the county the functions of the court were for the time suspended, during which period owing to the threatening state of affairs which prevailed, Shepherd deemed it necessary for the protection of the settlers that stringent measures should be adopted and therefore proclaimed martial law which was rigidly enforced by him.

At the session of the court held on the 6 day of April, 1778, the court have resumed its functions among other business transacted an order was entered summoning Col. Shepherd to appear and to answer to his contempt in not having first consulted the court before he had unauthorizedly had declared martial law in the county. Shepherd appeared in obedience to the mandate of the court and by way of defence explained that the exigencies of the case were such that they required to be promptly met and that delay would have proved disastrous to the public interests and the individual safety of the settlers. He disavowed any disrespect to the court or any intention of interference with its prerogatives or in any sense to act discourteously towards it as the representative of civil law and the conservator of the public peace.

His explanation together with the extenuating circumstances, served to disarm their criticism and he was honorably dismissed without censure.

In the summer of 1780 he accompanied Gen. Broadhead in his campaign against the Indian villages at the forks of the Muskingum on which occasion he commanded the militia which in part composed the forces of Broadhead. A portion of the militia resolved to go up the river to destroy the Moravian villages but the earnest efforts of Shepherd seconded by those of Broadhead prevented them from executing their project.

The description given of him is, that he was a man of ordinary height—say five feet, ten inches—inclined to be fleshy, of fine appearance having a commanding presence, possessed of magnetic manners and of a kind and gentle disposition.

He was noted for his generous and charitable traits of character being a true friend to the poor, who in return experienced for him the warmest respect and affection. It is said that he never refused the appeal of the poor and unfortunate but would sacrifice his own wishes and interests if thereby he could promote

those of his fellowman, or could contribute to their comfort, and welfare. So great was his kindness and liberality as to have won the respect and admiration of his savage foes. As illustrative of the regard in which he was held by these we recount the following incident:

On one occasion having spent the night at Fort Henry (Wheeling) he started early on the following morning to return to his own Fort at the forks of Wheeling six miles distant and had reached a point called the "Narrows"—a mere trail, a short distance east of the old Steenrod mansion when he was observed by a party of Indians who were on the crest of the hill immediately above him, who could easily have killed him had they been so disposed, but who refrained from shooting him because they said—"he was too good a man to be killed."

His wife's maiden name was Rachel Teague who was from the neighboring state of Pennsylvania. By her he had five children—three daughters and two sons. The names of the daughters were Ruth, who married Captain John Mills; Sallie who married Levi Springer, of Uniontown, Pa.; Elizabeth, who was twice married, her first husband being John McIntire, and her second John Lee. William Shepherd, his son, accompanied Capt. Mason when he was ambuscaded by the savages on the occasion of the siege of Fort Henry and was killed by the Indians. Moses his remaining son, married Lydia Boggs who after his death became the wife of Col. Cruger.

He had three sisters and one brother; the names of the former were Susan, who married John Eoff, the father of the late Dr. John Eoff, of Wheeling. Mary, who was twice married, the first husband being John Feay, of Ohio county, and the second Samuel Buchanan; Martha married a person by the name of McNabb, who resided in the state of Ohio. William, his brother, was also married but the maiden name of his wife we have been unable to ascertain. Nor have we been able to learn the time and place of death of either of them definitely but he must have died in the early portion of the year 1795, as the following entry appears in Order Book No. 4, p. 421, of the Circuit Court of Ohio county:

"The last will and testament of David Shepherd dec'd is proven in Court by William Flanahan and Wm. McIngher two of the subscribing witnesses and ordered to be recorded." This

entry bears date April 7, 1795. At the same time letters testimentary were granted to Moses Shepherd, one of the executors named in the will he giving bond in the sum of £3,000 penalty.

THE NATIONAL CHARACTER OF THE BATTLE OF POINT PLEASANT.

AND OF THE MEN WHO FOUGHT IT. THE FEDERAL GOVERNMENT SHOULD MARK THE SPOT.

By Virgil A. Lewis.

If an enduring monument is ever reared by the aid of the Federal Government, at Point Pleasant, it will be because of the national character of the battle fought there in 1774. Looking backward over the past, this battle stands out conspicuously between two great distinctive periods of American history. It is the greatest event in the colonial period and stands just at its close. With it, the revolutionary period begins. Hence that battle is, as it were, the connecting link between two of the greatest periods in all American history—closing, as it does the one and opening the other.

Every student of American history knows how that battle secured peace with the barbarian nations north of the Ohio for three years after it was fought, and how this, of itself, made possible the permanent settlement of Kentucky which became a base of supplies for George Rogers Clarke's conquest of the Illinois county. But more. Peace with the Indians at this time enabled General Gates to collect the American soldiery from all the region between the Kennebec and Savannah rivers and overthrow Burgoyne's army at Saratoga. This meant France to the rescue, and that meant the independence of the United States. But not all. Clarke's conquest of the region between the Ohio and Mississippi rivers enabled Virginia to create Illinois county, in 1778, and thus establish civil government in that region. This of itself secured, by the terms of the treaty of Paris, in 1783, the Mississippi river, instead of the Ohio, as the western boundary of the United States as fixed at that time. What other battle of

the olden time secured for this nation such grand results? No other in all the history of early America.

But what shall be said of the men who fought the battle of Point Pleasant? Were they national men, or did they become such?

The story of all time is made up of the biographies of men, and the life of an individual is but a leaf of history. The events of the past of which we know most, are those of which we have the fullest knowledge of the men who were actors in them. This is true of the Battle of Point Pleasant, and if we would know of its vast and far-reaching results and their influence upon the history and destiny of our country, we must learn of the men of the Virginian army who stood in battle array at the mouth of the Great Kanawha on that memorable 10th of October, 1774.

They represented the best element of European life, for only courageous and heroic men would cross an ocean to find civil and religious freedom on the confines of the great American wilderness inhabited by barbarous men. When war came, they marched away—a whole army of them—into that wilderness, leaving their flocks and herds without a fold, and their wives and children in lonely cabin homes surrounded by towering mountains which fretted the sky on every hand. But they went to fight a great battle and, in doing so, to win the Ohio Valley for civilization, that it might become a region in which should be established great republican states. This they did and then set about securing the results.

The war for independence was at hand and the heroes of Point Pleasant went to meet the heroes of Bunker Hill and together they were the heroes of Monmouth, Brandywine, King's Mountain, and Yorktown. Seven officers in the Battle of Point Pleasant rose to the rank of general in the revolutionary army; six captains in that battle commanded regiments on continental establishment in the war for independence; four officers in that battle led the attack on Gwynn's Island, in Chesapeake Bay, in July, 1776, which resulted in the dislodgment of Lord Dunmore, the late governor, who was thus driven from the shores of Virginia never to return; one officer in that battle was the most prominent American officer in the battle of Brandywine where he was severely wounded; another officer in that battle led the

advance at the storming of Stony Point, one of the most daring achievements of the revolution; still another officer in that battle, won lasting fame as the "Hero of King's Mountain." Hundreds of men in that battle were afterward on revolutionary fields and many of them witnessed the surrender of Cornwallis to the united armies of the United States and France, at the close of that struggle, at Yorktown. Indeed, it is a matter of history that these Point Pleasant men were on nearly every battlefield of the revolution. And one of them, when sixty-three years of age, led the Americans at the battle of the Thames, in 1813, secured a great victory, and thus broke the English power in the Northwest.

But it was not alone on fields of carnage that the men who fought the Battle of Point Pleasant, distinguished themselves. Six of them afterward occupied seats in the American House of Representatives; three of them were members of the United State Senate; four of them became governors of states; one of them a Lieutenant Governor; one of them a Territorial Governor; one of them military and civil commandant of Upper Louisiana; one of them a surveyor-general of one of the thirteen original states; one, the father of a governor of Virginia; one, the father of a supreme judge of Kentucky; one of them the largest manufacturer and wealthiest man in eastern Ohio at the time of his business career; one of them president of the Bank of St. Louis; one of them a framer of a constitution for Ohio; one of them receiver of public monies in a Western State; and a hundred of them state legislators and framers of state constitutions, while more than a thousand of them went forth to conquer again—not with a rifle, but with the axe—that they might fell the forests from which they had driven barbarism and change the lands into fruitful fields.

Was another such battle ever fought, by an army composed of such men? Their fame then resounded, not only in the backwoods, but throughout Virginia. Now, it is known to a nation. Historians have not done them justice. Still they have not been forgotten. Their names are all around us. Of the men who made national history at Point Pleasant, the name of one is preserved in that of a county in Pennsylvania; the names of three in those of counties of Ohio; four of them in county names in

Indiana: four of them in the names of counties in Illinois: four of them in county names in West Virginia; five of them in the names of counties in Tennessee; and ten of them in the names of Counties in Kentucky. Towns named in memory of men who were in the battle of Point Pleasant are found in many states, prominent among them being Christiansburg and Martinsville, in Virginia; Lewisburg, West Virginia; Flemmingsburg and Harrodsburg, Kentucky; Clarksville and Sevierville, Tennessee; and Shelbyville, Indiana.

The men whose names are connected with Dunmore's War deserved a tomb but many of them scarce found a grave. Is it not time that a nation they helped to found and establish shall recognize their eminent services by erecting on the scene of their greatest victory an enduring monument which shall preserve a memory of their courage, heroism, virtue and patriotism? I take it that a government so generous as ours will do this if the subject is properly presented to its legislators.

THE MILLERS AND THEIR KIN.

By Dr. Joseph Lyon Miller.

September 15th, 1749, there landed on the banks of the Delaware five hundred and fifty foreigners from several of the German states and cities, having sailed from Rotterdam, Holland, over a month before in the ship Phoenix, John Mason captain.

Most of them settled in Pennsylvania, but some moved on and joined their countrymen already settled in Virginia. It was of this class of pioneers that John Esten Cooke, one of Virginia's leading historians, says: "These Germans or Palatines were excellent people, and remarkable for their true piety. Like the Huguenots, they infused an admirable element into Virginia society—a brave and sturdy element which lingers in their descendants; among whom is a hardy soldier and ex-governor of Virginia, General Kemper."

Another writer says that though plain people they could nearly all read and write, which was more than could be said of any other class of settlers taken as a whole.

Among those who came in the Phoenix were, Jacob, Christian, Philip, and Peter Mueller, sons of Ulrich Mueller, a Burgher of Zweibrucken one of the chief towns of the Palatines. A burgher, I am told, belonged to a class in the German society of that day corresponding to that of the country squire in England.

The Muellers stopped for a season in the town of Yorke, Pennsylvania: then two settled permanently in that colony, one went to Maryland, and the fourth, Jacob Mueller, with his wife Bar-

CHRISTIAN MILLER.

bara and six children, crossed into Virginia by way of the old Packhorse Ford just east of Shepherdstown, Maryland, and settled in the Shenandoah Valley early in 1752.

From an old patent in my possession, I notice that Lord Fairfax, April 2, 1752, granted him 400 acres of land on Narrow Passage river near the border line between Frederick and Augusta counties. March 31, and April 1, 1755, he purchased from Joseph Helm two tracts of land of two hundred acres each for one hundred pounds and five shillings, and "the rent of one year

of Indian corn on the Feast of Saint Michail if the same shall be lawfully demanded." In the next four years he bought about four hundred acres more from various parties; and on the 1st and 2d of January, 1766, Lord Fairfax made him two more grants, together containing 740 acres, thus making him owner of about 1,950 acres of land in one of the finest parts of the valley. According to Henning of March 1761 he laid out 1,200 acres of this land into a town, ninety-six acres being divided into half acre lots and the remainder into streets and outlets of five acres each. At first the town was called Muellerstadt, as can be learned from Kercheval, who says, "This town seems to have been originally laid out upon a larger scale than any of our ancient villages." In 1761 when the place was "erected into a town" its name was changed to Woodstock by George Washington, who was the Burgess at that time from Frederick county. The main street was called King street, and the parallel streets on either side were known as Duke William and Queen, while two of the cross streets were named Fairfax and Martin. These names were all changed after the revolution. The lots were not sold but leased by Jacob Miller, the consideration varying from twenty shillings to twenty pounds; and each lease contained a curious provision binding the owner to build a house with either "a stone or brick chimney."

Jacob Miller was born about 1698 and died in May 1766. He was a man of some education for he signed all his leases and will, and his inventory mentions "to all the Books English and Dutch £2, 5s." This same inventory calls for personal property worth five hundred and twenty-seven pounds, three shillings, and one penny, showing him to have been one of the wealthiest men of his day in that section. His will and inventory mentions besides his wife, Barbara, his children, Ulrich, Jacob, Barbara (mar. Brubaker), Christian, Susannah, Mary, and Martin named for Lord Fairfax's nephew; with "George Decon servant man" and "Elizabeth Smith servant maid."

———

Christian Miller, 3rd son of Jacob and Barbara Miller was born in Zweibrucken in 1744 and died in Woodstock, Virginia, April 28th, 1836. A newspaper account of that date states that he was the last of the soldiers of the revolution in Shenandoah

county and that his funeral was the largest ever seen in that town. From August 1780 to May 1781 he was a Sergeant in Captain Jacob Rinker's Virginia company of Continental soldiers. Kercheval, the historian, refers to him several times regarding some of the old Germans customs and the Indian raids around Woodstock. He has been described as being "Rather tall and portly with brown eyes and clean shaven face, his hair in a queue. He wore a cocked hat, long blue coat a frilled shirt and stock, yellow waistcoat, grayish homespun breeches and low shoes with silver buckles." He was comfortably well off.

In 1771 he married Catharine Wiseman, born in 1746, and died in May 1837, who bore him ten children, eight of whom grew to maturity and married, leaving descendants that are now scattered in sixteen southern and western states. In all branches of the family there are many who have held offices of public trust and honor, from the lowest county offices to those of the State Assembly and Auditor; one sat in Congress for several years and another was a personal friend of President Cleveland and his Commissioner of Internal Revenue. They have done their duty on the battlefield also. Two sons and a grandson as private, corporal and ensign in the war of 1812; grandson and great grandson as private and captain both gave up their life in the Mexican war; nineteen grandsons and great grandsons did their duty in the Confederate army, there being ten privates, one musician, one sergeant, two lieutenants, three captains, and two majors; and lastly four gt., gt., grandsons and one gt., gt., gt., grand son served their country as two privates, one corporal, a captain, and a major in the war with Spain. As to occupation they are farmers, merchants, lawyers, doctors, civil engineers, etc. Their names are to be found on the roll books of most of the leading colleges of their native states, as for example in Virginia we notice them on the rolls of: The University (since 1830), Va. Military Inst., Randolph Macon, Hampden Sidney, Univ. College of Medicine, Hollins, Fairfax Hall, Episcopal School at Staunton, and Weslyn Female Institute at the same place.

And so it may be said of Christian Miller that:

"The lad that sported years ago
In Shenandoah fields,
Hath made his life as bountiful
And as blessed as their yields;

As tender as the skies that stretch
Above old Woodstock town
And as pure as are the winds that blow
From bleak Mount Jackson down."

I have collected the necessary data for an extensive genealogical history of nearly all of the descendants of Christian Miller, but the remainder of this sketch will be devoted to the family of his son, John Miller who settled in the Kanawha Valley. To save space I shall omit many of the dates of birth, etc., of the generations now living, and also some other matter of minor importance.

———

John Miller, third son of Christian and Catharine Miller, was born at Woodstock, May 31, 1781. Being of an adventurous spirit he went "west" to the Great Kanawha Valley in 1795 to make his own fortune. His father gave him forty pounds in money and the advice never to go security for any man, as he had done to his sorrow, and "always act fairly and squarely in everything." He stopped for a time at Fort Clendenin, where he met the girl who became his first wife ten years later. Later he settled in Gallipolis, an old French town four miles below the mouth of the Kanawha, where he found but two other persons who could speak English—a Colonel Safford and a Mr. Murry—so he had to learn French which made him conversant with three languages, French, German and English. Here he followed the business of a hatter until 1810 when he abandoned it for farming which was more to his taste.

January 26, 1806, he was married to Sophia Clendenin, daughter of Maj. William Clendenin, and his wife Margaret Handley. Wm. Clendenin, the second son of Charles Clendenin, was born May 23, 1758, and died in 1828. His wife was a daughter of John Handley, born May 10, 1762, and died in 1835. William Clendenin was a private in the battle of Point Pleasant in 1774.

and later was commissioned Major in the Kanawha militia of which his brother George was Colonel and Daniel Boone Lt. Colonel. He represented Kanawha county in the Virginia Assembly in 1796, 1801, and 1803; and was her Collector of Levies in 1792, 1793, and 1794. Was also a Justice of the Peace and member of the first court in the county held at his house in 1789. About 1790 Major Clendenin settled on the Ohio river nearly opposite Gallipolis. In 1804 he carried the petition to the Assembly asking for the organization of Mason county, whose first representative he became in 1805. His daughter Anne, born July 31, 1799, married in 1815 Henry Miller (brother of John), a Corporal in the war of 1812.

In 1810 John Miller moved his family across the Ohio to the Virginia side where he had purchased a part of the farm now known as "Elwell," home of Judge C. P. T. Moore. Here he built in the valley between the river and hill a brick house one and a half stories high with big rooms and a wide hall on the first floor. This old house stood until a few years ago, and is said to have been the first brick residence in Mason county (Sketch of C. C. Miller in the History of the Kanawha Valley). The second brick house is that opposite Point Pleasant owned by Mrs. Ella Henderson Hutchinson, and built by her grandfather Samuel Henderson in 1811. The Elwell place was given to John Miller's eldest son, Christopher, who sold it to Judge Moore. In 1819 John Miller moved again, this time to Teay's Valley where he bought a thousand acres on the Richmond and Lexington turnpike, to which he later added several hundred more and continued farming. Here the family were often called upon to entertain strangers travelling that thoroughfare connecting Virginia with Kentucky; for as Miss Emily Mason, in speaking of her first visit to Virginia from Lexington with her father and his family in 1820 and of subsequent journeys across the mountains, says: "In all the distance from Leesburg, Virginia, to Lexington, Kentucky, there did not exist an inn or a tavern, only in cities could such a demoralizing institution be found. In the morning, we would leave our lodgings, with every expression of good will,—no word being hinted of payment, which would have been an insult. My father would go in advance, as evening approached, to look for the most available house. There we

would be received with a cordial and cheery welcome; the best was set before us: and the yawning feather beds soon closed above our weary heads. I remember hearing one of our kind entertainers say of a family living near, 'oh, they are very fine; the daughters wear calico every day.' That was in the day when all wore homespun, and we wove our own blankets and our linen sheets." I have heard my father say that several times Henry Clay, Marshall and other great Kentuckians were the honored guests of his father in Teay's Valley.

It was here in the valley that John Miller's wife died April 17, 1823, (having been born March 27, 1783). October 23rd of the same year the widower married Sallie Henderson, daughter of Col. John and Elizabeth Stodghill Henderson, of "Henderson," at the mouth of Kanawha. Col. Henderson came from one of the oldest families of Fifeshire, Scotland, and was connected with the families of Bruce, Hamilton, Harrison, Stuart, and others. His grandfather was Lieut. James Henderson, of the French and Indian war; his father, John Henderson, was a lieutenant at the battle of Point Pleasant in the army of his brother-in-law Gen. Andrew Lewis, and later served through the revolution in Gen. Daniel Morgan's Virginia Regiment. Col. Henderson himself was first a lieutenant in the 79th Va. Regt. in 1795, then 1st Major of the 106th Regt. according to an old muster roll of 1812, and in 1815 commissioned Colonel of the same regiment. He was Mason county's representative in the Virginia Assembly for eight years between 1809 and 1820 inclusive; in 1804 he was a member of her first court and in other years between that and 1820 he was her Collector of Levies and High Sheriff. He was born August 30, 1768, and died August 19, 1824. In 1792 he married Elizabeth Stodghill, daughter of John and Elizabeth Harvey Stodghill. She was born August 3, 1776, and died February 20, 1846. One of her sisters married Hugh Caperton, and another John Arbuckle.

Sallie Henderson Miller was born January 6th, 1797, and died January 26th, 1872. In 1831 the Miller family removed for the last time, this time settling in the Kanawha Valley about four miles from Point Pleasant; here John Miller purchased a farm known as Locust Hill, and another about five miles farther up the river known as Beech Hill, the two together contain about

nine hundred acres and are still owned by his descendants. Originally they were a part of the George Washington grant in 1772. Besides his land John Miller owned about twenty-five negroes and other personal property in proportion. June 12th, 1838, he divided his lands, negroes, and other property among the children of his first wife, excepting the Kanawha land, nine negroes and other property which he retained for the children by his second wife: the children of the first binding themselves not to claim any of this reserved property at his death. For over forty years he was a Master Mason and was one of the charter members of Morning Dawn Lodge, at Gallipolis. John Miller died of quinsy, March 19th, 1846. In appearance he was tall and muscular, clean shaven, and had black hair and eyes; and it has been said was very fine looking. He had a fair education, was very shrewd, fond of a jest and of "good living."

The four sons and one daughter by his first wife, and the six daughters and one son by his last, who grew to maturity and married, will be taken up with their descendants in regular order.

———

CHILDREN OF JOHN AND SOPHIE CLENDENIN MILLER.

Christopher Miller, born December 6th, 1806, and still living in 1900. In 1830 he married Letitia Hamilton, of Richmond, a neice of Major John Cantrell. Before the war he was Sheriff of Mason county for two years. Being of a roving disposition he has travelled and lived in nearly every Western State, but principally in Missouri, where his children live in Union county.

———

William Clendenin Miller, born January 26th, 1809, died July 27th, 1886. For over half a century he was one of Cabell county's most prominent business men, as a farmer and merchant. His home at Barboursville was one of the most elegant and hospitable in the county. The house and "office," built of brick, contain fourteen rooms and four halls, and before the war were always filled with a crowd of gay young people. March 6th, 1838, he married Eliza Gardner, of Greenup, Kentucky. Her family history is both interesting and romantic. A few years before the French Revolution her grandfather, the Marquis

Maison De la Geneste, left France and settled in the Island of St. Domingo. Here he purchased three sugar plantations and several hundred negroes—nine hundred I was told by his great grandson, the late Judge H. J. Samuels, of Cabell county. He had but one child, a daughter named Marie Terese Sophie Clotilde Rason De la Geneste, who at the age of fourteen became the wife of Mr. Gardner, a merchant trader sailing out of Boston. Her father opposed this marriage very much on account of the difference in family rank. But Mr. Gardner sold his ships and settled down on the plantation in St. Domingo. In 1796 came the Insurrection of the Slaves. By means of a faithful slave they escaped to a United States vessel and later landed at Philadelphia, with only their clothing, two servants, who chose to come with them and some costly jewels that Madame had concealed from the mob. Here they sold a pair of solitaire diamond earrings for two thousand dollars, with which they decided to go to the French, in Louisiana. They went to Pittsburg by stage coach and there took passage on a flat boat loaded for New Orleans. The water was low in the Ohio and near Greenup, Ky., the boat ran aground. Being tired of the slow journey already Mr. and Mrs. Gardiner decided to stop here instead of going on to Louisiana. So they rented the largest house in the village and opened an inn, which became a famous hostelry in that part of Kentucky in the first half of the nineteenth century. Several pieces of costly jewelry were handed down to their descendants, among them a pair of diamond cuff buttons to Judge Samuels. Later they received a partial indemnity from the French Government. From an old letter written at Paris in 1854 I see that the "fifteenth annuity of the St. Domingo Indemnity due the heirs of the late Mq. Maison Dela Geneste" was due in 1852. William and Eliza Miller were the parents of six children: Charles, the first son, is a large timber land owner in the back counties on the Guyandotte.

George F., second son, was a captain on the staff of General John S. Williams, C. S. A. After the war he entered the Clerk's office at Indianapolis, Indiana. Here he married a daughter of Colonel Alexander Davidson, and granddaughter of Noah Noble, Governor of Indiana in 1831 to 1837.

William, third son, owns a beautiful farm and home on the Guyan river. His wife was Annie Curtis, of Kentucky.

Joseph S., fourth son, is a prominent lawyer and for eight years was Commissioner of Internal Revenue under President Cleveland. He was Auditor of West Virginia from 1877 to 1885; and is a writer of dialect verses and short stories for the New York Sun. His wife was Florence Trice, of Maryland.

Eugenia, the eldest daughter, married Prof. B. H. Thackston, of Marshall College, West Virginia.

Florence Gardner married George F. Miller, president of the Huntington First National Bank.

———

Charles Clendenin Miller, born February 23d, 1811, died March 13, 1898, took a prominent part in the affairs of Mason county as a merchant, farmer and banker. From 1834 to 1846 he was High Sheriff of the county, and later State Senator from that district. In 1843 he became the first president of the Point Pleasant Merchants' and Mechanics' National Bank, and continued so till 1879, when he retired to "Spring Hill," his country home, about a mile from Point Pleasant. This is considered one of the handsomest places on Kanawha and contained at that time about three thousand acres. The house built of brick and set in a grove of trees that cover several acres, is a fine example of the big, roomy antebellum Virginia home. In 1831 Charles C. Miller was married to Eleanor, only daughter of John Cantrell, who was a major in the war of 1812, and for several years a member of the Virginia Assembly. There was but one son, John Cantrell Miller, who grew to maturity. He was a merchant, and married first Amanda Handley, daughter of John Handley, of Mason county. His second wife was Maria Bowyer, daughter of Hon. John Bowyer, of Putnam county. There were four daughters born to Charles and Eleanor Miller. Sophia married General George Bowyer, of Winfield. Eleanor B. married Captain Robert Buffington, whose first wife was her aunt, Eliza Miller. After Captain Buffington's death she married Frank Dashner. Margaret married John Dashner, a farmer in Carroll county, Mo. Anna married E. S. Bright, a Mason county merchant.

In 1856 Charles C. Miller married again. This time to Virginia

Middlecoff, daughter of Jacob and Sarah Wilson Middlecoff. Her grandmother was Sarah Christian, a sister of Colonel William Christian, of the battle of Point Pleasant and the Revolution. The Christians are one of the oldest and best families in the Isle of Man. There were two children born to this marriage: Blanche Cantrell, married Rankin Wiley, a Point Pleasant lawyer, and one time president of the West Virginia Senate (1892). And Edith Clendennin, who married Ben Stephens, a Mason county farmer and stockman.

———

Henry Harrison Miller, born December, 1813, and now living in Covington, Kentucky. Before the war he carried on a large mercantile business in Guyandotte, but owing to his Southern sympathies his home and other property, with that of other sympathizers, was burned by the "Home Guards," of Proctorsville, Ohio. After the war he moved to Covington and became a Cincinnati commission merchant. In 1837 he married Eliza Chapman, of one of the best families of Cabell county. Of their children, who grew up, Edgar, the only son, is a wholesale fruit merchant in Cincinnati. His wife was Matilda Bond, of Louisville. Frances married Fred Beuhring, of Cabell county. Leonora married Collins Thornburg, of the same county. Arabella married Colbert Cecil, a Catlettsburg, Ky., merchant, grandson of Kinzy Berry Cecil, one of the early Kentucky pioneers from a good old English family. Cora married John Metcalf, of Cincinnati.

———

Margaret Miller, born November 25th, 1818, died August 19th, 1859. December 12th, 1837, she married Hon. Thomas Thornburg, a Cabell county farmer and merchant. He was a member of the Virginia Assembly beginning in 1857 and in 1872 a member of the West Virginia Constitutional Convention. He was a Master Mason and for forty-six consecutive years secretary of the Cabell County Lodge No. 13. Their eldest son, John Thornburg, was a first lieutenant in the command of General A. J. Jenkins, C. S. A. He married Mary Long, of Mason county, where he now lives, doing business as a banker and Kanawha farmer, making a specialty of thoroughbred Hereford cattle. George, the second son, is a merchant at Barboursville.

also owning and managing several large farms in Cabell county. His wife was Nannie Wilson, of that county. Bayley, the third son, was also a farmer and merchant. His wife was Nettie Samuels, daughter of Judge Samuels, one time member of the West Virginia Legislature. Elizabeth Thornburg married Dr. A. B. McGuinnis, of Guyandotte. Ellen married Captain Will Hovey, U. S. A. Mary and Margaret are yet single.

CHILDREN OF JOHN MILLER AND HIS SECOND WIFE, SALLIE HENDERSON.

Nancy Miller, born October 1st, 1827. Married, September 16th, 1852, Rev. Stephen Kisling Vaught, of Kentucky. He was one of the leading ministers of the Southern Methodist Church in the West Virginia Conference from 1842 till 1879. They had two sons who grew to maturity. First, Dr. Robert Lee Vaught, who graduated second in a large class at Vanderbilt University in 1886, besides receiving several other honors, including a place as Interne at the Nashville City Hospital. Later he removed to Chattanooga, where he built up a large practice and became professor of anatomy in the Chattanooga Medical College. August 28th, 1895, he was drowned while bathing in the Kanawha river. Second, William Henderson Vaught, who now owns Locust Hill, the old Miller home. He is considered one of the best farmers in the valley, and makes a specialty of thoroughbred Black Pole cattle. In 1895 he married the only daughter of Walter Hardin Hogg, of Mason county. He is a descendant of Major Peter Hogg, the famous Augusta county lawyer. Major Hogg was an intimate friend of Washington and of Lord Fairfax, as well as one of the latter's executors. In 1754 he was commissioned a captain in Washington's regiment in the French and Indian war. In 1772 he was granted some eight thousand acres of land in Mason county.

James Henderson Miller, the only son of John Miller by his second wife, was born June 6th, 1829, and died at Beech Hill February 19th, 1898. He was educated by private teachers and at Marshall Academy, where all the boys of that section of Virginia before the war were sent to school. He was there in 1845 and 1846, about seven years after the founding of the academy. In 1849 he moved on the Beech Hill place, part of which he in-

herited and part purchased from his sister. He was an old-time Southern Democrat, and in 1860 voted the Breckinridge and Lane ticket, though he took no active part in the war or in politics, except as a commissioner or judge of the County Court for four years. I have a copy of this old ticket that he perserved, which, besides pictures of the candidates, tells also the principles they represented—"The Constitution. The Sovereignty and Equality of the States; The Repeal of the Missouri Restriction; The People of the Territories in forming State Governments to adopt their own Institutions; Equal Protection to Citizens Native and Naturalized, and to every species of property." Below is given a list of the electors, and I notice that the Fourteenth District was represented by John G. Newman, of Kanawha.

March 27, 1851, Henderson Miller was married to Harriet E. Craig, daughter of James Kennerly Craig, one of the leading planters of the Kanawha Valley. His old chum at Marshall, Albert J. Jenkins, who later was one of the generals of the Confederate Army, was the groomsman on this occasion. James K. Craig was a grandson of Rev. John Craig, one of the first Presbyterian ministers in the Valley of Virginia. He was born in New Dunager, County Antrim, Ireland, August 7th, 1709; received the degree of M. A. from the University of Edinburgh in 1733; and arrived in America August 17th, 1734. There are many interesting stories related of this old gentleman, but I have not room for but one. In selecting the site of the "Tinkling Spring" Church the congregation disregarded his wishes and he declared that "none of that water should ever tinkle down his throat," and for forty years he kept his word, even in the summer days, when he preached from ten in the morning until sunset with only an hour of intermission. One of his sermons yet extant, is divided into *fifty-five* heads. Mrs. Miller's mother was Catharine, daughter of Captain William and Catharine Madison Arbuckle. Captain Arbuckle was a well known Indian fighter, and his wife, the widow of another one—Lieutenant John McClannahan. Her father was John Madison, the first clerk of Augusta county, and for several years her representative in the House of Burgesses. His relationship to President Madison's father has never been positively settled—whether he was uncle or cousin—but they both sprang from the same ancestor. This

was Captain John Madison, who settled in Gloucester county in 1652-3, between which date and 1662 he was granted 2080 acres of land. One of Catharine Madison Arbuckle's brothers was Bishop James Madison, the first American born Episcopal Bishop; another was a general in the Revolution; and the others held high positions in Virginia and Kentucky.

Henderson and Harriet Craig Miller were the parents of six children, who grew to maturity. First, Willie Anna, married Henry Hannan Eastham, a grandson of George Eastham, of Farquier county, one of the soldiers in the battle of Point Pleasant. Second, John David, who married Elizabeth Downing Wilhoite, of one of the oldest families of Woodford county, Kentucky. Third, Minnie J., married V. B. Bishop, a large retail and wholesale merchant in Highland county, Virginia. He is a descendant of the Bishop and Peale families of Rockingham. Fourth, George Kennerly, married Anna Moore, of Ohio. Fifth, James Henderson, Jr., married Beatrice Brockmeyer, of Huntington. Sixth, Sarah Vaught, married Samuel Couch, son of the late Hon. James H. Couch, of "Holmwood," Mason county, and grandson of Dr. Daniel Couch, of Williamsburgh. Mrs. Miller died February 2d, 1872, and September 29th, 1874, J. H. Miller married Finetta Lyon, daughter of Joseph Lyon, of Woodford county, Kentucky. The Lyon family were among the early settlers in Central Kentucky from Virginia. The family came to Maryland from Perthshire, Scotland, about the middle of the eighteenth century. Stephen Lyon, the emigrant, was killed in the French and Indian war, October, 1754. Mrs. Miller's maternal line, also early settlers in Central Kentucky, goes back through the Jelfs, Davises, Criglers, Aylors, Fieldings and others to the early years of Virginia. The first of the Davis family in Virginia was John Davis, son of John and Johanna Hewlinge Davis, of Gloucestershire, England, who settled on Queene's Creek, York county, in 1623; his inventory was recorded here September 14th, 1646. After Bacon's Rebellion John Davis' grandson, John Davis, settled in Westmoreland county, where he married in 1691 Susannah Day, widow of Solomon Day, as shown by an old deed in my possession, in which they convey to George Brent 200 acres of land. Their son, Thomas Davis, who owned a large plantation in Stafford county, married Sarah

Fielding, daughter of Edward Fielding, one of the wealthiest planters in Northumberland county. Their son William married Catharine Carter, daughter of James Carter, November 17th, 1755. Thomas and Sarah Fielding Davis were the great-great-great-grandparents of Finnetta Lyon Miller. Space forbids me from mentioning the generations that come between. The name Fielding has been used as a given name in all the generations of the Davis family since 1720. There were two sons born to the second marriage of Henderson Miller. First, Dr. Joseph Lyon, the author of this sketch. I spent all my early life on the farm in the Kanawha Valley, except the years spent at college. I was educated at the Methodist School in Cabell county, now known as the Maurice Harvey College, had two years at the University of Nashville, and received my medical training in Richmond at the University College of Medicine, in charge of the celebrated surgeon, Dr. Hunter McGuire. Inheriting a love for Virginia history, I have made considerable research into her early history, and have embodied some of it in several newspaper and magazine articles. In 1900 I accepted the position of assistant physician to the Davis Coal and Coke Company's employes at Thomas, Tucker county. The second son is Stephen Kisling Miller, who now owns the old home at Beech Hill, on the Kanawha, that has been in the Miller family since it passed from the hands of the Washingtons. He is considered one of the brightest business men that have gone out from Mason county; and being a fine machinist is employed by the Deering Harvester Company to travel over West Virginia and part of Virginia setting up and starting their machines.

Anne Eliza Miller, born November 8, 1831, died of cholera at St. Louis July 16th, 1854. November 13th, 1850, she married Captain James Robert Buffington, of Mobile, Alabama. He was a native Virginian and was from one of the oldest families of Cabell county. They had one son, Llannes Buffington, who now lives in Fort Worth, Texas.

Mary Caroline Miller, born February 20th, 1834, died December, 1899. May 24th, 1859, she married Absalom P. Chapman, a merchant at Guyandotte, and member of an old Sandy Valley family. They had one daughter, who grew to maturity. This is Emma Evelyn, now the wife of Charles E. McCulloch, who owns

one of the largest Kanawha Valley places in Mason county. He is a son of John and Mary Bryan McCulloch. The McCullochs were originally from Maryland, where they settled prior to the Revolution. Mrs. McCulloch was a granddaughter of George Clendenin, founder of Charleston, colonel of Kanawha militia, first representative of Kanawha county in the Assembly, &c.; her mother, Parthenia Clendenin, was first married to Governor Jonathon Meigs, of Ohio, and was mother of Return Jonathon Meigs, also Governor of Ohio.

Rhoda James Miller, born October 13th, 1836, married July 25th, 1855, Edmund Pendleton, Chancellor of Wood county. Most of his life was spent as captain of one of the large Ohio river passenger steamers, and under President Cleveland he was United States Inspector of Steam Vessels for the Ohio river and its tributaries. He is descended from a fine English family dating back to one of the law officers of William, the Conqueror. In 1682 Captain Richard Chancellor, a soldier of Charles II., was implicated in Monmouth's Rebellion and fled to Virginia, where he settled in Westmoreland county. His sword and other relics were handed down in the family until destroyed in the burning of Chancellorsville, the home of Rev. Melzi Chancellor, in the civil war. Here Captain Chancellor married Catharine, daughter of William and Catharine Fitzgerald Cooper, and granddaughter of Richard Cooper, one of the charter members of the Virginia Company, who settled in Virginia in 1634. Edmund Pendleton Chancellor's grandfather, Thomas Chancellor, was a private in the Virginia line in the Revolution; his wife was Judith Gaines, neice of Edmund Pendleton. Edmund and Rhoda Miller Chancellor are the parents of four children: Edmund Pendleton, Jr., married Belle Carnahan. Eugenia married Castella Rathbone. Rose Carroll and Nan Preston still single.

Sarah Emily Miller, born November 20th, 1839, married September 18th, 1870, Hunter Ben Jenkins, of St. Louis. He is general agent of one of the large Mississippi river packet companies. He is of Virginia descent and is connected with the Leggets, Yosts, Kyles and other families of the Valley of Virginia. They have two sons, William and George.

COLONEL JOHN DICKINSON.—A SKETCH CONTRIBUTED BY J. T. McALLISTER, HOT SPRINGS, BATH COUNTY, VIRGINIA.

One of the earliest settlers on the beautiful Cowpasture river, in what was then Orange county, later Augusta county, but now Bath county, Virginia, was Adam Dickinson. From the very first he and his sons became large land owners. The very first grants from the King in this section embraced large tracts of land to Adam Dickinson, not only along the Cowpasture river, but also along the Jackson river, and shortly afterwards I find grants to his son John in the beautiful Warm Springs Valley, which lies between these two rivers—the valley in which is the celebrated Falling Springs and the renowned Hot Springs, Healing Springs and Warm Springs.

The surveys on which these earliest grants issued were made as early as 1745, but at that time Adam Dickinson was already in possession of the lands. This fixes the time when he came to this section as prior to 1745.

The first "Commission of the Peace" for Augusta county was issued by Governor Gooch on October 30th, 1745, naming twenty-one magistrates for the county, and Adam Dickinson was one of these.—(*Waddell, p.*) 26.

From the data before me I find that Adam Dickinson died some time after the year 1754. Those were by no means "piping times of peace." Far from it. These settlers had made their homes in a section still claimed for hunting grounds by the Indians, and the reason which induced Governor Gooch to allow them to settle along this western section of the State was avowedly to form a barrier of protection for the settlements east of them.—(*Foote.*)

On July 27th, 1756, at "a council of war" held at Augusta Court House, the council decided to build one of the forts at John Miller's, on Jackson river, reciting that the frontiers are properly protected by the forts of Captain Hog [Dinwiddie], Breckenridge and *Dickinson*, and ordered that the garrison at Dickinson consist of forty men.

At the same time John Dickinson was appointed a captain of horse. This fort was on the old Dickinson place, on Cowpasture river, and this John was the son of Adam, the pioneer. This fort

was built prior to 1755. In that year several children playing under the walls of the fort, were run down and caught by the Indians, who were not discovered till they arrived at the very gate. It was located about four miles below Millboro. (*Withers*, p. 75. *Note. II. Dinwiddie*, p. 218, 220.)

John Dickinson and this fort became from the time the object of unending criticism from old Governor Dinwiddie, some of his choicest sarcasm being reserved for Dickinson, who afterwards became a colonel.

In the orders of 16th May, 1757, disposing of the troops to be raised by Colonel George Washington, commander-in-chief of the Virginia Regiment. He was ordered to place seventy of the 450 men to be raised in charge of Dickinson Fort, with Major Lewis in command. (*II. Dinwiddie*, p. 622.)

This fort was attacked in the year 1757. The reports made of this attack by Colonel—Buchannan to Governor Dinwiddie, dated the 23d of July, 1757, stated that there were 200 Indians in the attacking party—an estimate which the Governor was loath to accept.

During some assault on this fort and probably this one, a young girl (Miss Irwin) aided in moulding bullets for the men. This young girl became the grandmother of the late Judge William McLaughlin, Rector of Washington and Lee University, and one of the most distinguished judges who ever sat on the Circuit bench in Virginia.

In this year 1757 there was at this fort Arthur Campbell, then 13 years of age, who volunteered to aid in protecting the frontier. He was wounded and captured, taken to the great lakes, detained as a prisoner three years, when he made his escape and returned home. April 1771 he removed to the Holston. He was prominent in the Assembly and in the State Convention of 1788. Frequent mention of the services of this Arthur Campbell then Col. Arthur Campbell in the revolution, is made in Lyman C. Draper's valuable book "King's Mountain and its Heroes." *Waddell*, p. 98.

The records are silent as to the services of Capt. John Dickinson until 1763 when he appears with Capt. Christian in the pursuing party who overtook a part of the party of Indians whom Cornstalk led to the Kerr Creek massacre. This party was

overtaken near the head of Back Creek in Bath County, and was routed, a number of them killed and nearly all of their equippage taken.

About this year Captain John Dickinson becomes of interest again, as being the host and protector of that strange young Algerine, Selim, whose pathetic history is retold in all the local histories. So grateful was the remembrance and his hospitality to the young stranger that when he returned again to this country after being rejected and driven from home by his Mohammedan father, he comes again to Captain Dickinson to enjoy again, even amidst his insanity, the generous kindness of that home. (*Waddell,* p. 126a *Hale.*)

That this is but rescuing a slight glimpse of the struggle between the Indians and the whites will appear when it is remembered that from September 1756 to May 1758 the number of whites killed, wounded or captured along the Cowpasture and Jackson rivers was sixty-seven.

It seems probably that it was between the 20th May and the 21 Aug. 1767 that Capt. John Dickinson was married to Martha [illegible]. On the first named date he conveys alone. After that she joins in his deeds of conveyance.

Again the silence closed around him. He next appears in command of one of the companies led by Col. Charles Lewis from Augusta County to the battle of Point Pleasant in October 1774. At this time Robt. Thompson, of the Cowpasture river, was a member of his company and Joseph Mayse, who came from that section and was wounded in the battle, was probably another. Captain Dickinson himself received a wound in this battle and was one of the Captains left with Col. Fleming at the Point when General Lewis crossed the Ohio.

From this time on the name of Dickinson becomes associated with the Kanawha Valley. It was only a few years later (1785) when Captain John Dickinson entered and surveyed the 502 acres of land at and about the mouth of Campbell's Creek, containing the original salt spring or Big Buffalo Licks. (*Hale T. Pioneers,* p. 219, 271.)

In 1777 it was determined to advance an army into the country of the Shawnee. The place of rendevous was to be the Fort

at Point Pleasant where General Edward Hand was to come from Pittsburg and assume command.

Withers' "*Border* Warfare" states: "In pursuance of this resolve three or four companies only were raised in the counties of Botetourt and Augusta: and these immediately commenced their march to the place of rendevous, under the command of Col. Geo. Skillern." He states that one other company only was raised, and that from Greenbrier.

As a matter of fact I have convincing evidence that about 700 men were led there; not under the command of Col. Skillern alone who was along, who was Lt.-Col., but also under Col. John Dickinson with Sam'l McDowell, of Botetourt, Major.

The Greenbrier company, raised by Capt. Mathew Arbuckle, was under Col. Dickinson.

One of the Augusta companies was raised by Capt. Thos. Smith with Chas. Baskens as Lt. and it marched from Staunton, Va., and was under Col. Dickinson.

One of the Botetourt companies was raised in September 1777 by Capt. Charles Campbell, with Sam'l Davidson as Lt. and was also under Col. Dickinson. Another of the Botetourt companies was raised by Capt. John Paxton. This company rendevoused at Capt. Wm. Paxton's in said county, near North river, and about one week later marched to Captain John Paxton's near Lexington, thence to Collierstown, thence to Captain Donnally's Fort in Greenbrier County, thence to Point Pleasant. This company was under Col. Dickinson.

Another of the Augusta companies was raised by Capt. Geo. Moffett and was also under Col. —— Dickinson.

In addition to these companies Withers (p. 153) mentions Captain Hall's company of volunteers of Rockbridge volunteers.

I have a statement made by a soldier who was at the Fort at the Point when these troops arrived and he says that Col. Jno. Dickinson was in command and that they numbered about 700 men.

Here while these troops were stationed there occurred the brutal murder of Cornstalk and his son, Ellinipsico, and the two Indian warriors Red-Hawk and Petalla. (*My MSS. D.* 32.)

Here too was announced to these troops the encouraging news of Burgoyne's surrender on 17th October, 1777. The men were

marched out in line and Major McDowell rode along the line giving them the glad news.

Here too occurred another incident which has as completely escaped our Virginia writers as the battle of Point Pleasant has escaped (?) the attention of Northern historians.

When General Hand came down from Fort Pitt he found Capt. Mathew Arbuckle in command of the Fort with Capt. Wm. McKee (of Botetourt) second in command. He ordered these captains to shorten the daily allowance of the food of the men, declaring that they feasted too high. When this order was made known every man in the Fort shouldered his musket and started for home. Major Sam'l McDowell prevailed on General Hand to recall the order, followed the men and persuaded them to return. (*My MSS.*)

When the county of Bath was formed in 1791 the name of Col. John Dickinson was included in the list of Gentleman justices who were to compose the County Court as was also Samuel Shrewsberry who was one of his sons-in-law. But Col. Dickinson declined this appointment.

As we have seen Col. John Dickinson was the owner of lands in Kanawha County. In 1796 he conveyed some of these to Joseph Ruffner, others to John Shrewsbury and Sam'l Shrewsbury (his sons-in-law) and in 1799 he conveyed others to John Koontz.

When he died in 1799 he was still the owner of large tracts of land in Bath, Greenbrier and Kanawha Counties, Virginia and in Kentucky.

The land conveyed to Joseph Ruffner had been sold to him on June 11, 1793, and contained 502 acres by patent, and it lay on Campbell Creek. It afterwards became the Kanawha Salt Works. At the time of the sale it had a salt spring on it. The sale bonds were conditioned upon the water producing a certain number of bushels of *sail*able salt in twenty-four hours *Boyling.*"

When Col. John Dickinson died in 1799 he left two sons, Adam and John, and four daughters, Nancy, the wife of Joseph Kinkead, Mary the wife of Sam'l Shrewsbury, Martha the wife of John Shrewsbury, and Jane the wife of Charles Lewis.

Adam and John Dickinson remained in Bath County where they were both prominent in the affairs of the county.

Joseph Kinkead and Nancy, his wife, (married in October 1795) moved to Kentucky where prior to 1834 Joseph Kinkead died.

Samuel Shrewsbury and his brother John subsequently moved to Kanawha County. As I have said above Samuel Shrewsbury was one of the first Gentleman Justices of the County of Bath. He held other important offices in it. In 1795 he was commissioned by the Governor of Virginia as the Sheriff of the county. During this term of office Joel Shrewsbury was one of his deputies. The records show that in May 1798 Sam'l Shrewsbury had removed to Kanawha. John Shrewsbury was also commissioned as one of the Justices of Bath in 1795.

I have data from which it seems probable that these Shrewsburys came from Bedford County, Virginia, where the name of Dickinson and Shrewsbury were both prominent and from which point there were also removals of some of these families to Kanawha.

Charles Lewis, who married Jane Dickinson, was a son of Col. Charles Lewis, of Point Pleasant fame. He was born in the year 1774. (*Peyton* 292.) Two sons, John D. and Charles C. Lewis were born to them. After the death of her husband the widow married James Wilson.

The children of Sam'l Shrewsbury and Mary, his wife, were John D. Shrewsbury, Samuel Shrewsbury, ——— wife of ——— James, ——— wife of Jacob Darneal.

The children of John Shrewsbury and Martha (married Nov. 1793) were John L.; Wm.; Joel; C. L. and ——— wife of John Rodges, Jr.; ——— wife James Craik; ——— wife of Joel Van Meter.

The children of Adam Dickinson were John U.; Brown; Adam; Eliza, wife James M. Lewis; Martha, who first married Andrew S. Warwick and after his death James R. Erwin; Mary, wife of Thos. A. Bell; Harriet wife of G. W. Bell; Adeline, wife of Cyrus Price, and Nancy, wife of Wm. D. Kinkead.

The children of John Dickinson were. Hariet K., wife of Wm. Hutcheson (md. 17 March 1829); Wm. K.; Chas. B.; and Caroline C., wife of Wm. Mitchell.

J. T. MCALLISTER.

January 1902.

THE RUFFNERS.

No. IV. HENRY. FIRST ARTICLE.

By Dr. W. H. Ruffner.

CHILDHOOD.

Henry Ruffner, eldest son of Col. David Ruffner, was born in Shenandoah County, Va., Jany. 16th, 1790. The house of his nativity is still or was a few years ago, standing near the Willow Grove Mills on the Hawksbill Creek about a mile above Luray (now Page County). Here the child Henry remained in his father's family until the removal to Kanawha in the fall of 1796, at which time he was six years and nine months old. Usually in biographical sketches this infantile period is passed over with little or no remark; but when advanced in life he himself was fond of recurring to this budding stage, because even to old age he retained interesting memories of the period. When four years old he was taken to Pennebaker's iron works, and never forgot the new and terrifying scenes. At about the same age he remembers the birth of a sister, and how his curiosity was satisfied by being told that the baby was found in the mill-pond. And he was not much older when he caught his first stone-toter (fish), and witnesed the burning of his grandfather's great barn. An account of these and other incidents of childhood he has left among his biographical memoranda. Dr. Stanley Hall and other students of infantile psychology would be interested in such memorabilia.

YOUTH.

On the 20th of October 1796, the little boy Henry arrived with the rest of the family at the Clendenin Blockhouse, and there he remained until the removal to The Licks in 1805. Here is a period of nine years concerning which we have but few memoranda. It may be supposed, though I have no knowledge, that there was by this time at least a primary school in Charleston, small as was the population. It is quite certain that before he left Charleston Henry had acquired a taste for solid literature. By this time he rode on bags to his father's little "Corn Cracker"

on Elk, and it is said that he sometimes rode through Charleston with Hume's England lying open before him, his head bent forward, and he so absorbed in reading as to forget everything about him.

From early youth he was an omnivorous reader. When a boy he engaged with other boys in fishing, swimming, raccoon hunting and such like, but not with the usual boyish enthusiasm. He was graver and more abstracted than other boys. In truth his mind moved on a wider plane, and besides, he was extremely diffident. He used to tell of his father taking him when he was quite a big boy to the house of a German farmer. The farmer asked him some simple question, but Henry was so struck with embarrassment that he could not answer a word. The man after staring at him a moment turned and said in German, "The boy's a booby"—not knowing that German was the boy's mother tongue.

When the family removed to the salt works the Ruffners owned the whole bottom from the mouth of Campbell's Creek to the cross line above Malden. David and Joseph were the principal owners. By this time Henry did farm work and helped with the sinking of the first salt well.

In a former number I erred in saying that Col. David Ruffner built the house near the mouth of George's Creek in which he and his descendants lived so long. His first residence was a mile below that house, in Tinkersville, near the salt well. The nucleus of the upper house, afterward much enlarged, was built by George Alderson, and was his residence, where he died in 1805, a few months after he had sold to the Ruffners. Alderson had a small mill on the creek, and a blacksmith shop, neither of which did much business, both water and custom being scarce.

Alderson's death was a terribly unhappy one, and his restless ghost was supposed to haunt the premises. Whilst his family remained in the house, the ghost hung about the mill and blacksmith shop. What he did, and what happened in consequence was well told many years afterward by Dr. Henry Ruffner who when a youth had a startling experience in the haunted house. It is told in the Southern Literary Messenger for July 1856. After telling something of the mill and shop, the writer continues:

"Here, therefore, solitude and silence generally reigned at night; and here first the hapless ghost of Alderson was reported to give tokens of his presence. In the dead hours of the night, sounds of grinding were heard at the mill, and the clink of a hammer was heard in the shop, whilst will-'o-the-wispeth lights faintly glimmered and flitted about the place.

A few months before Alderson's death, my father and uncle had purchased the land on which he lived near the old salt lick above Charleston, with the view of experimenting for salt water upon it. A few months after his death, the surviving family left the dwelling house vacant, and so it continued to be for several months, because the owners had no immediate use for it. Now, as ghosts, like rats and owls, are apt to haunt a deserted house: so this poor ghost took possession of his old residence, and began to frighten passers-by. He was seen gliding through the dusky yard in the evening shadows, and was heard at late hours of the night making a pother in the empty rooms. These signs of his presence were the more frequently observed, because the house stood by the road side near the river bank. He had the boldness, one Sunday morning, when a fog obscured the atmosphere, to look out of an upper window at a couple of young people passing along the road, and to frighten them with an indistinct view of his physiognomy.

But this ghastly occupant was not permitted very long to keep exclusive possession of his old premises. My uncle, an old bachelor, had newly taken a wife; and not having the fear of ghosts before his eyes, took the occupancy of the house, had it swept and garnished, and made ready in every respect to receive him and his bride, when they should return from a visit to some kinsfolk in the east.

Now as there was valuable property in the house, my uncle asked me to go and lodge there every night, as a guard during his absence. An old negro woman, who occupied a cabin near the house, would be a sufficient protection by day; but not by night, because her fear of the ghost would cause her either to desert the premises, or to call in company who might not be altogether trustworthy.

I readily consented to be the night guard of the haunted house, though I felt rather queer, when I thought of the ghost

stories. I was a youth of 16 years, devotedly fond of books, given to solitary misings, of a nervous temperament and a susceptible imagination. My memory was full of ghost stories which I had read or heard; but I was a firm disbeliever in apparitions of the dead. Intellectually, therefore, I had no fear of seeing a disembodied spirit, or of any harm that could result from the sight of such intangible beings; yet I was so affected by mere association of ideas, that whenever I passed a graveyard, alone, by night, or other gloomy place reported to be ghost-haunted; I felt a vague, nervous apprehension, that some shadowy form might rise before my imagination, if not before my eyes. To the living, the state of the dead, and the nature of a disembodied spirit, are involved in mystery; and the idea of meeting with one of these departed spirits in gloom and solitude, raises an instinctive dread, lest the veil which covers the secrets of the grave to which we hasten should be prematurely raised.

The evening after my uncle's departure, I went alone to his house, a mile from my father's, and arrived at dark. The old negro furnished me with a lighted candle, and forthwith left the place, fearing it seemed, that the ghost might come upon her in the cabin, notwithstanding my presence in the house, a few yards distant.

The night—a September night—was warm and perfectly calm; the room—my uncle's bed room—was small and close. I therefore opened a window looking into the back yard, and placing the candlestand near it, I went to a small book case in the room, to get something to read until bed time. Some of the 30 or 40 volumes I had read; others I cared not to read. At length I met with a small duodecimo volume, bearing the strange title of "The Bloody Buoy," which I found to be a compilation by Peter Porcupine (Cobbett) of all the horrible atrocities committed by the French revolutionists during "the reign of terror." This volume excited my curiosity, and notwithstanding the horrifying nature of its contents, I selected it for my evening's entertainment.

I sat down by the open window, and was soon immersed in scenes of blood and murder—once shocking realties, and now reproduced in my imagination, and the more vividly by reason of the gloomy and exciting circumstances around me. Here was

I, half a mile from all living men, alone in a dark night, in the room where the dissipated man had given up the ghost—that mad, miserable ghost, which was believed by many to haunt the place where he had lived so long and died so wretchedly.

Readily, therefore, did my imagination body forth the horrible scenes of the French revolution—atheistical frenzy, reveling in blood—base born wretches yelling, like demons, for death and destruction;—a good king and a beautiful queen dragged from the throne to the prison, and from the prison to the scaffold;—then the scaffold daily drenched with the blood of the aged and the young, the wise and the fair:—crowded prisons emptied by wholesale murder with knives and bludgeons, and whole families of innocent citizens, jammed by hundreds into covered boats, and sunk, shrieking, to the bottom of the deep river. The longer I read the heart-sickening details of these cruelties, perpetrated by demonical atheists in the name of liberty, the more did my head grow dizzy and my blood run cold at the contemplation of so much wickedness and so much suffering. I could almost see the forms of the murdered, and hear them as they ascended from their gory beds, shrieking to heaven for vengeance upon their murderers.

I laid the book down. The night was nearly half gone. Every thing around me was still as death. Not even a cricket chirped on the hearth, nor did a beetle's low whir break the solemn silence. I heard nothing to indicate life or motion, but the pulsations of my own heart. Outside, the night was intensely dark and sultry. Dank vapors brooded over the earth. I held my candle out of the window, but could see nothing except the branches of a golden willow tree that grew by the window.

I resumed my seat and fell into a train of musings. Gloomy and tragical thoughts ran through my mind. I reflected on the folly, the wickedness and the misery of my fellow creatures. Human life, (thought I), must appear to an atheist as a thing of no consequence; blood as merely a red liquor, thoughts and feelings as nothing more than changes of action in the electric fluid, and death as the stoppage of a worn-out or disordered machine. But man has a spirit within him, which outlives the body. That immortal part of our nature, when it leaves its house of clay, carries with it the memory and the feelings of its former

life in the body. If it went forth imbued with earthly affections, and unprepared for spiritual enjoyments, it would desire still to hover about the place of its former abode. And who knows whether it may not be permitted sometimes to do so,—to punish itself by frequenting the scene of pleasures now lost forever, and by seeing others enjoy there the warm life it loved and has lost. So, as the living go to renew their grief at the tombs of the dead, the dead may, for aught that we know, haunt the abodes of the living, to torment themselves with vain regrets for enjoyments past, and fruitless remorse for sins yet to be atoned for.

From this train of thought I was suddenly startled by the sharpest, the most ear-piercing cry that I had ever heard. I knew it instantly to be a cry,—quick and momentary, as a stroke of lightning: but what could have uttered it, was past conjecture. I knew of no earthly creature's voice, that could make a sound so quick, and penetrating; nor could I distinctly characterize it as a scream, a shriek, or a screech. Nor could I have told where it originated. It seemed to have been uttered close to my ear, and I would have been sure that it was, had any living or moving form appeared, when I looked suddenly around me. But no such thing was visible. All things remained as they were before, motionless and silent as death. I was frightened and perplexed. It seemed that the ghost was present; and knowing my thoughts, had shrieked an answer to the question then on my mind.

With tingling nerves and palpitating heart, I sat still and watched for some development of the mystery. For a long time, as I thought,—but perhaps not so very long,—I saw nothing, and heard nothing more. My nervous agitation began to subside, but my mental perplexity rather increased. In vain did I try to conceive what could have uttered that sound.

At last I was startled again by the repetition of the cry, as quick and shrill, but not quite so strong as before. Now, it did not seem so strange and unearthly as in the first instance. Methought that I had heard something similar in former times. Now too, I perceived that it issued from the darkness outside. I was not kept long in suspense. In a few seconds, the sharp cry was succeeded by sounds less shrill and less equivocal,—namely by

the uh-huh-h-hoo of my old acquaintance—Minerva's bird of wisdom—the owl. Probably my light had drawn him near to the window, on his silent flight; and as nothing to alarm him appeared, he perched himself upon a bough of the willow tree by the window to gaze at the candle. Not knowing what to make of this dazzling object, and perhaps intending to frighten it, if this light should conceal an enemy, he uttered that terribly startling sound."

Before leaving Charleston Henry formed a worthy friendship with Samuel Williams, who came with his father's family to Charleston from Ohio in 1803 and remained for some years. This was one of the early Methodist families. The friendship between the boys was genuine, and continued through life. Ex-Governor Atkinson in his interesting history of Kanawha County gives some extracts from articles entitled "Leaves from a Portfolio," written by Samuel Williams many years after he left Kanawha in the "Ladies Repository,"-a magazine published in Cincinnati in the years 1851-4. Mr. Williams writing of himself in the third person, says:

"During his sojourn on the Kanawha Mr. Williams formed an intimate acquaintance with a congenial spirit, a son of David Ruffner, Esquire, resident half a mile above Charleston on the river. Henry Ruffner the boy I allude to, was some four years the junior of Williams; but his sober-mindedness and steady habits, his love of books and the pursuit of knowledge, seemed to annihilate the difference in age. In their tastes and in their feebly-aided desires for mental improvement, as well as in their recreations and amusements, the hearts of these two juvenile friends beat in unison, and they sought and enjoyed each other's company as much as the proper attention to their daily avocations permitted. I hesitated when I commenced this paragraph about giving the name of this young friend of Mr. Williams, as he is still living. But as I write in all kindness to him, and cherish the recollection of our youthful associations and friendship, I hope the Reverend Doctor—for he has long been a distinguished divine in the Presbyterian Church—will pardon the liberty I have taken."

With this I close the youthful period of the subject of this sketch.

EDUCATION.

Before he had reached manhood, Henry showed plainly that he was not made for a farmer or a salt-maker. His inclination toward a literary life had grown with his growth and by the time he was 19 his father yielded, and sent him to Lewisburg in 1809, where only the year before the famous Rev. Dr. John McElhenney had commenced a classical school. This wonderful man by his preaching and teaching, and by his magnetic personality, exercised a wide, long-continued and transforming influence over the people for a hundred miles around him in every direction.

In 1845 a member of the New York press visited the Greenbrier country, and was so struck with the influence of Dr. McElhenney that he wrote to his paper: "Wherever in the hundred valleys that lie hidden in the mountains of South-western Virginia you shall observe a dwelling around which reign thrift and neatness, and within which are found domestic happiness and enlightened piety more than is common, there will you hear them speak with reverence and affection of this good man, and tell many a story of days spent at school in Greenbrier. Let it be known that he is to preach, and all will be seen moving as when John the Baptist preached in the wilderness of Judea; for even those who at other times neglect the house of worship, will not neglect it when this veteran officiates. For the space of two hundred miles all around him he is the bishop acknowledged by all hearts. * * * * I may add that in the best sense such a man never dies. His spirit and principles will live in ten thousand hearts in successive generations, while a single human voice is heard, or footstep seen among the mountains of Virginia."

Dr. McElhenney was a South Carolinian, educated at Washington College, and sent by Lexington Presbytery to Greenbrier and Monroe Counties. He settled in Lewisburg in 1808. He remained in charge of his congregation there for *sixty years*, but by rapid excursions and almost incessant preaching he evangelized a large proportion of a scope of country that may well amaze every one who knows how faithful in duty he was to his own people, and how successfully he at the same time conducted a classical school for 20 years. This school was developed finally

into Lewisburg Academy, which has been a center of light ever since. Rev. Stuart Robinson who had been a pupil said of him: "Dr. McElhenney is the greatest man I ever knew in the ministry—great, I mean, with the greatness of action and faithfulness in the Master's work."

As to his school Dr. Plumer another of his many distinguished pupils says: "He taught with great diligence and *eclat*. All his pupils admired him."

It was to this school and under the strong and healthful influence of Dr. McElhenney that Henry Ruffner came in 1809, and remained for three years. His mind and heart here found the peace and stimulus that he had craved in vain for years. Here he became a Christian. Here he gave himself wholly to study and to the cultivation of his spiritual nature.

He mastered the classical and mathematical studies taught in the Lewisburg School so thoroughly and was carried so far on his course, that when he went to Washington College in May 1812 he was able to graduate on the four years curriculum in a year and a half. He received his degree of A. B. in the fall of 1813. Whilst a student he also taught some classes in the Grammar School.

As was customary in those days he with the other students was examined in the presence of the Board of Trustees. In the only examination record I have been able to find he received the highest mark—*Optimus* on every study. At that time the upper grades were *Bonus* (Good). *Melior* (Better). *Optimus* (Best). He not only received *Optimus* every time, but upon one occasion a special prize offered for the best scholar. His devotion to study he confesses as an apology to his friend Sam'l Williams for epistolary neglect. Said he in a letter written June 6, 1812: "While drinking at the Castalian fount, I almost forget to raise my head, and view the passing scenes of real life."

The president of the College was Dr. George Baxter a truly great man, who was the son of the former Surveyor of Northwestern Virginia. Dr. Baxter was the successor of Rev. Wm. Graham, who near the close of the 18th Century endeavored to establish a colony on the Ohio river in Kanawha County, now Mason County. His name is still there. Mr. Graham and Dr. Baxter both taught theology during their College presidency;

there being in those days no theological schools. Mr. Ruffner having completed his College course spent a year studying theology with Dr. Baxter. A part of his time during this year was occupied in teaching the classes of the professor of languages, who died after a long illness. This brought Mr. Ruffner to the fall of 1814.

He next gave a year to travelling. He says he travelled in the Western and Eastern parts of the United States, but he does not tell exactly where he went, or how he travelled. He was all his life fond of long excursions on horseback, and probably this was his mode of conveyance.

MISSIONARY PERIOD.

By the autumn of 1815 he was back in Lexington, ready to receive his license to preach, which was conferred upon him Oct. 8 by the Presbytery. Straightway he returned to the valley of Kanawha, whose religious destitution was one of the strongest motives that led him into the ministry. The character of the population which had gathered about the salt-works has been mentioned in a former article; but whilst there was less wickedness there was almost equal destitution elsewhere in the valley and in the side valleys. Here the young preacher came to devote himself, possibly for life, to the evangelization of these people.

In his old age he gives an account of his labors and changes in the Kanawha Valley between the autumn of 1815 and the spring of 1819. It is found in an address which he began to write for delivery to his Malden congregation on his 70th birthday, Jan. 16, 1860, but which was not finished. After describing the moral condition of the people in 1815, he mentions other facts woven into a narrative, which I give in his own words, to-wit:

"From Charleston up this valley for miles beyond the salt-works, no religious society or church building of any sort existed, and few sermons were heard amidst the din of business and the shouts of profaneness. There were many women and some men of good moral character; but few of them were influenced by religious feelings, or could firmly withstand the evil influences that bore hard upon the principles of honesty and conscientiousness, which require the aid of religion to make them firm against worldly temptations.

When all these moral evils were rising to their full height, I commenced my ministry here in November 1815. I preached in the little old Court House in Charleston which could seat about 40 people or by using the jury-room benches, about 50 or 60. It was the only house in the town in which any sort of public assembly could be held. At the salt-works I preached in my father's house and sometimes at a little school house near the Burning Spring. Afterwards I was invited to hold meetings sometimes in other private houses on both sides of the river. The congregations for the first 2 or 3 years were small, varying from 20 or 30 to 50 or 60 persons. But the number gradually increased, and the attention became more serious; but although ministers of other denominations began now to preach more or less in this neighborhood, there was not in those times any strong or general excitement, such as we usually call a revival. The seed of the word did not spring up suddenly. Its growth was slow but sure. But within this first period of 2 or 3 years I had begun to extend my labors into the outer and most destitute parts of the county. In some parts my Baptist and Methodist brethren had done what circumstances permitted to supply the spiritual wants of the country, and had organized a few small societies. The Baptists were the oldest denomination in the country. In the upper parts of this valley and below Elk as far as Coal river, and on Coal river and in Teaze's Valley, they had small churches and 2 or 3 very humble buildings, in which they could meet for worship; but at this time they had no salaried minister who devoted his time to their services; but only 2 or 3 preachers who having to support their families by worldly labor, could not attend regularly to pastoral duties. By invitation I often preached for and among these feeble societies of Baptists, and was always treated with brotherly kindness.

But the most of my labors outside of Charleston and the Salt-works, were directed towards the parts of the country where the people had little or no preaching of any kind and where no Christian Society existed. I preached on Elk river as far up as the settlements then extended. I was the first minister who ever preached in the upper settlements of Pocatalico; and could, a year after I began to visit that people, have organized a Presbyterian Church there; but being as yet a mere licentiate, I could

not regularly organize a church. Before I was ordained, and had authority to organize a church, a Methodist brother, who towards the last, began to join me in my visits to that region, succeeded in organizing a Methodist Society there. Having enough to do elsewhere, I then gave up that new ground to my Methodist brethren, and was pleased to hear that they continued to cultivate with success a field in which I had first and not a few times preached the gospel. But whilst I rejoiced that others had successfully entered upon a field which I had labored to prepare, I was then and am to this day convinced that our Presbyterian system is defective in its ways and means of providing for the spiritual wants of a new country, such as Kanawha then was. In this connection I ought to mention that for years after I began my ministry, I neither asked nor received any salary or reward for my labors: though I had only to ask that I might receive a missionary appointment with a salary. But in those flush times of salt-making my father, though not then a religious man, cheerfully afforded me what was needful to enable me to give my labors freely to those who needed spiritual assistance, and for that reason I chose to leave the missionary fund of my Presbytery whole for the benefit of other parts of West Virginia, and to labor as a volunteer without pay. In the third year after I began my ministry in Kanawha some friends took up a subscription for me, the most of which was collected and paid over to me, and the next year I received something more in the same way. My total receipts as a minister during my 3 1-2 years service here may have amounted to 6 or 7 hundred dollars, and for this I had mainly to thank my good friend William Whitteker, Sen'r., who took the leading part in obtaining for me a remuneration for my services. Misfortunes in business reduced him to poverty in his old age; but he was an honest man and a Christian. He never in the days of failure and embarrassment, when the soul of honesty is tried, attempted, so far as I know, to defraud his creditors. This is highly to his credit, especially in this country in these days of adversity.

But to return to my narrative. In the 2nd year of my ministry here in Kanawha some gentlemen started the scheme of building an Academy in Charleston. Subscriptions were taken and in a few months the walls and roof of a large building were fin-

ished; but the funds proving deficient, the interior of the house was left unfit for occupancy and the enterprise seemed ready to fail entirely.

It seemed that from the first, I was expected to become chief teacher in the Academy when the building was prepared. The elder Judge Summers, then at the head of the Kanawha bar, and always a warm friend of mine, proposed that I should engage to teach in the Academy, as an inducement to further subscriptions to complete the building. I agreed to open a school there the next fall. Seeing the necessity of prompt measures to prepare the building for use, I hired carpenters on my own responsibility to lay floors, make benches, &c. After a room was prepared I opened school and had as many pupils as I could attend to; but after paying workmen's bills, I had the first session but $5.00 left as my share of the tuition fees. My school continued three half yearly sessions (if I remember rightly); the principal rooms of the house were finished, one of the large rooms contained in the building was fitted up as a place of worship, and continued for years to be the only place in the town in which a congregation of more than 50 people could be seated. As the citizens contributed something towards completing the house after my first session, I got some considerable share of my tuition fees: amounting I guess to several hundred dollars. Besides my earnings as a teacher, I received during the two last years of my ministry the proceeds of a subscription for services as a preacher. Altogether during these years I received a sufficiency to pay my necessary expenses, as I had no one but myself to provide for, and my best friend Wm. Whitteker gave me half a year's board gratuitously during my first session's teaching in the Academy, when my net income as a teacher was five dollars.

In the fall of 1818, I met the Lexington Presbytery in Lexington and was ordained to the full work of the ministry. On my return I organized two churches, one in Charleston, which embraced the salt works. It numbered some 16 or 18 members, of whom but one is now living; she is now a member of this church (at Malden), a mother in Israel, waiting like myself, in much bodily weakness, for the Savior's call to the rest which remaineth for the people of God.

The other church was in Teaze's Valley about 18 miles from

Charleston. Its members were nearly as numerous as those of the other church. This might have grown to be a strong church had it been attended to by my successors in Kanawha. But having been neglected for years its members gave up in despair and joined other denominations. It is useless now for me to regret two things in regard to my first ministry in Kanawha; 1st. That I did not confine my labors to three principal points where I judged that with God's blessing strong churches could be founded, instead of scattering my labors among destitute neighborhoods where less good could be done in the long run: 2nd. That I had not procured ordination a year sooner, that I might in time have gathered unto the fold, the little flock on Pocatalico who were then waiting to be organized; and 3rd. That I was persuaded to teach school in the academy, by which my ministerial labors were circumscribed. And lastly perhaps I ought to regret that I was induced to leave Kanawha to become a professor in Washington College and pastor of an old church near Lexington. I studied the question of removal maturely, and concluded for several reasons that I ought to go. The college where I had got my degree, and near which I had found a wife was in a low condition and threatened almost with extinction by the splendid University just going into operation at Charlottsville. It was thought my talents and turn of mind fitted me for the duties of a college professorship. In short I was persuaded to fio; and then for the space of 30 years, I was but a yearly visitor in Kanawha. I was gratified to find that notwithstanding some untoward circumstances, the foundation which I had laid in this the wickedest and most hopeless part of Kanawha stood firm, that the church grew under my successors, and that the Academy, though the building was burnt soon after I left, had gotten a start, which kept it alive. A second building on a *smaller* scale was erected on the ruins of the first, and has been used as an Academy ever since. In a few years the church at Charleston felt able and willing to erect their present house of worship."

Whilst going on with the work of preaching and teaching in Kanawha without any thought of change Mr. Ruffner was in the winter of 1818-19 surprised by an invitation to take the chair of Ancient Languages in Washington College. After due reflection he accepted. The College session was to open May 19

1819. He had however an important engagement to be in Lexington, April 1st. He organized the Charleston church March 14th of that year, and at once (the next day probably) he started for Lexington. On the first of April he was married by Dr. Baxter to Miss Sarah Lyle, daughter of Captain William Lyle, a large farmer near Lexington. This was the happiest event of his life.

Before the College opened he returned to Kanawha—perhaps bringing with him his wife—both on horseback—and held some meetings in and about Charleston. He attended two meetings of the elders (April 29th and May 2nd), and recorded the proceedings—as may be seen in the old session book now in the hands of the pastor of the church. The meetings were held in Mercer Academy.

When Washington College opened, May 19th, he was in place, and began what proved to be a thirty years' career as professor and president.

Lexington, Va., Feb. 16, 1902.

JUDGE E. S. DUNCAN.

By Henry Haymond, Esqr.

Edwin Steele Duncan was born in Berkeley County, Va., June 18, in the year 1789. But little is known of his education and occupation in early life. From the fact that Judge —— Allen of Bottetourt County, was his step-father, it is presumed that young Duncan studied law under his direction. John J. Allen late Judge of the Court of Appeals of Virginia, was his half brother. Mr. Duncan located in Randolph County in 1810, for the practice of his profession, and in 1813 married Prudence, the daughter of William B. Wilson, son of Col. Benjamin Wilson, one of the early pioneers in that section of the State.

He was elected to the House of Delegates from Randolph. He served as a staff officer in Col. Isaac Booth's Regiment in the war of 1812, with England, and was on duty at Norfolk.

He was Commonwealth's attorney for Randolph County in 1814.

He removed to Clarksburg in 1816, where he had qualified as an attorney at the spring term of the Circuit Court of 1811, before Judge Hugh Nelson.

He was appointed Commonwealth's attorney for Lewis County in 1817, and was elected a member of the State Senate in 1820, and served as U. S. District Attorney from 1824 to 1829.

Judge Duncan was a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1830, having been elected from a district composed of the counties of Harrison, Lewis, Wood, Randolph, Kanawha, Mason, Cabell and Logan.

His colleagues were John Laidley of Cabell, Adam See of Randolph and Lewis Summers of Kanawha.

He served in that body which was composed of the ablest and most distinguished men of Virginia, on the "Committee on the Executive Department."

When the Constitution made by this Convention was submitted to the vote of the people for ratification or rejection, the counties west of the Alleghenies were opposed to its ratification because it was a continuation of an injustice to and a discrimination against the people of the west—and Harrison county gave 1,112 votes against and only 8 votes for it, which clearly shows that Judge Duncan made the iniquity so apparent that the voters turned out and voted almost unanimously against it. This was the largest vote of any county now in the State of West Virginia.

He was commissioned Judge by Governor John Floyd on the 20th April, 1831, his commission sets forth "That the General Assembly of the Commonwealth of Virginia, having by a joint vote of both Houses elected Edwin S. Duncan, Judge of the General Court, and Circuit and Superior Court of Law and Chancery for the 18th Circuit and 9th District, &c."

At that time the Judges held their positions "During good behavior, or until removed in the manner prescribed by law."

Judge Duncan took the oath of office May 7th, 1831, before John Davis, Justice of the Peace, the father of John J. Davis, and held his first Court in Harrison County on the 16th of the same month. His Circuit consisted of the counties of Harrison Lewis, Randolph, Nicholas and Fayette.

Judge Duncan resigned from the bench early in 1848, and turned his attention to agricultural pursuits on his large landed estates in Harrison County.

In 1851 he was appointed a commissioner to represent Virginia, at the World's Fair in London, and upon his return deliv-

ered an address to a large audience in Haymonds Grove, Clarksburg, describing his experiences with, and his impressions of the people of the old world.

He died at his town residence in Clarksburg on the 4th day of February, 1858.

The resolutions adopted by the Harrison County bar, at a meeting held on the day of his death, states that "He became distinguished as a lawyer, and discharged all the public trusts confided to him with eminent ability," and "In private life he was held in universal esteem and respect."

An anecdote is told of Judge Duncan to the effect, that upon an occasion when associated with Philip Doddridge in the trial of an important land case at Clarksburg Doddridge, being a candidate for Congress, was anxious to go on a canvassing tour, but was afraid to trust the case to his less experienced associate; particularly, as Briscoe G. Baldwin of Augusta, was on the other side. He remained until the evidence was in, and Baldwin commenced his address to the jury, by quoting Shakespeare. Duncan leaned over and whispered to Doddridge, "You can go. I can manage any lawyer who will quote poetry to a jury in a land case." Duncan gained the case, but regretted making the remark as it had been repeated to Baldwin.

Judge Duncan was about six feet in height and well proportioned, of imposing appearance and dignified bearing, of a kindly, genial disposition, of decided convictions and possessed of a well balanced intellect.

His courts were conducted with formality and dignity and his opinions were delivered in clear, concise and unmistakable language.

POCAHONTAS COUNTY.

By Rev. W. T. Price.

This county was formed by an Act of Legislature passed Dec. 21, 1821, and was taken from Bath, Pendleton and Randolph and subsequently in 1824, some additional territory was taken from Greenbrier and added to Pocahontas, and now it comprises 820 square miles.

It was named after the favorite daughter of the great chief, Powhatan, whose history is read and known of all men, and

whose descendants are proud of their ancestry and are of the best people in Virginia. The geographical position of Marlington, the county seat, is indicated by the intersection of North Lat. 38 degrees, 13 minutes, and West Long. 80 degrees, 8 minutes. This county is the valley-head of a tier of counties comprising Pocahontas, Greenbrier and Monroe.

Col. John Baxter was very active and influential in promoting its organization.

COURT HOUSE.

The first white persons to spend a winter in what is now Pocahontas county, were Jacob Marlin, and Stephen Sewall. One is remembered by the name of the Court House, Marlington, and the other by the names of mountains in the vicinity. These men camped for the winter in 1750-51 on Marlin's run. It is said that they agreed to disagree and lived apart, and that Col. Andrew Lewis found them so living. Marlin in the cabin and Sewall in a large hollow tree. Sewall explained to Lewis that since their separation there was more satisfaction or better understanding for now they were on speaking terms and on each morning it was "good morning Mr. Marlin and good morning Mr. Sewall."

This sycamore tree remained until some time during the war, being probably used for a camp fire. It had a cavity that could receive five or six persons and the writer has been often in it for

shade or shelter. Their differences were about theological opinions but the real point of difference has never been exactly known, and there have been many traditional hints and guesses but never settled.

Sewall withdrew to a cave above eight miles at the head of Sewall's run, then pioneered further on some forty miles to Sewall's creek where he was slain by the Indians.

"Against her foes religion well defends
"Her sacred truths; but often fears her friends,
"If learned, their pride; if weak, their zeal she dreads
"And their hearts weakest who have soundest heads
"But more she fears the controversial pen
"The holy strife of disputatious men."

Pocahontas is an Eastern border county; Allegheny top being the line between the two Virginias, and from the centre of West Virginia she lies to the southeast.

Among the distinctive features of the northern section of this county, is the fact of its being a part of the elevated territory where nearly every river system of the Virginias have their head springs. The entire county has a great elevation, and some of the highest peaks of the State being within its limits.

Greenbrier river rises in the north east highlands and flows for the entire length of the county through the central portion.

Williams river is in the western part of the county and flows into the Gauley. Knapps creek rises in the Allegheny and joins the Greenbrier at Marlington. Deer creek and Sellingtons creek from the east, Leather Back, Warwicks Run and Clover creek, from the west are important tributaries to the Greenbrier in upper Pocahontas. In middle Pocahontas, from the east, there are Thorns creek, Knapps creek, Douthards and Cochrans creek, and Cummings and Browns creek, while Stony creek and Swags are from the west. In lower Pocahontas there are Stamping creek, Locust creek, and Trump run from the west, and Beaver, Laurel and Spice from the east. The old Field Fork, Statz Fork and Big Spring are branches of Elk river, in the north west. Knapps creek is said to have been named for Knapp Gregory, supposed to have been the person of solitary eccentric habits.

who in 1743 reported to parties in the lower Shenandoah Valley that he had seen water flowing to the westward, and it is thought it was the source of Knapps creek, and this report prompted Marlin and Sewall's exploration of this region and their locating at Marling's bottom. Knapp Gregory's disappearance was sudden and mysterious and has never been accounted for.

This entire county may truthfully be called mountainous. Its natural scenery and mountain views are beyond description. Droop mountain overlooks Hillsboro. Gibson's Knob overlooks Clover Lick and from which the peaks of Otter in Bedford County, Va., may be seen, which is one hundred and ten miles away. And other knobs and peaks are too numerous to mention.

Pocahontas is the land of "Springs and Fountains," and such an abundance of purest and freshest water baffles all ordinary powers of description. There are springs and springs, all sorts and conditions, of all sizes and dimensions sufficient to run mills. Mineral springs of all kinds everywhere, not to be excelled by any yet discovered. Sulphur, Magnesia, Chalybeate, Salt, Alum, and there is one called the Natural Lemonade Spring. In one locality there are fresh water and purple sulphur water welling up from the same rock within a radius of a yard or so. These springs have been health resorts for fifty years or more, and all their beneficial and medical qualities have not yet been ascertained. One has been named " Butter Milk Spring," Saltpeter Cave, Ice Cave, Blowing Cave, are all to be found with many other curiosities and wonders about which we dare not tell all for the sake of our reputation.

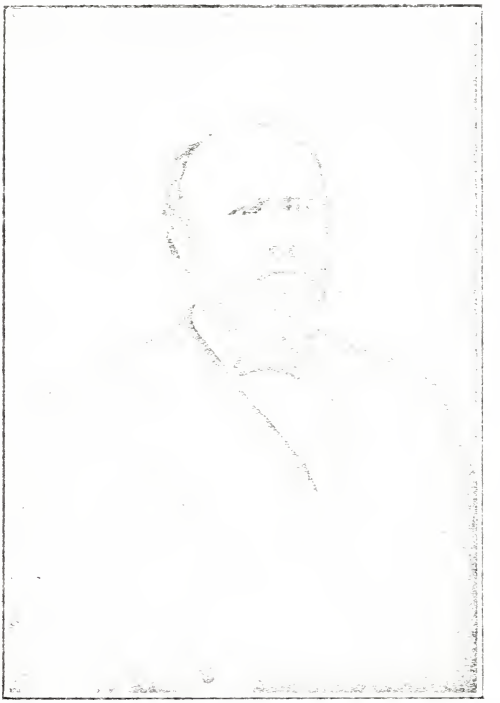
Timber of all kinds and especially the pine covers the entire county, and while for years there have been taking pine logs from these mountain sides, there is plenty still left and much territory that has never been touched by the woodman's axe. One district of the county was called the "wilderness," because it has never been penetrated, and its woods are thick and its land rough.

There are lands that are limestone and all other kinds of stone, and coal has been found but not fully developed within this county.

The soil is fertile and grasses grow in abundance, the elevation

was such that for a long while they were not able to raise corn, as the frost would destroy it before it had ripened.

The climate of this county has changed surprisingly in the past eighty or ninety years. In 1810 Major William Poage, at Marlin's Bottom, had a corn field that was quite promising and he was asked by a neighbor how much corn did he think he might have from that splendid looking crop. After some thoughtful hesitation, Major Poage replied, very cautiously that he ven-



REV. W. P. PRICE.

tured to believe that there was a probability of being some eight or ten bushels, that out of three or four hundred possible bushels of corn growing, there might be some eight or ten bushels that would ripen and be fit for Johnny-cake, pone or hoe-cake. Now there are produced large yields of wheat, corn, rye, oats, millet, buckwheat, &c.

Grazing is one of the principal enterprises as a branch of the farming industries, but it cannot be said that this will remain so.

as the development of the transportation by the branch railroad, will lead to the erection of saw mills, the opening of coal mines and the construction of iron furnaces, and these to be followed by manufacturers until the business of the county will have changed as much or more than the climate.

But enough of this description of the face of the county, it must be seen to be comprehended, for it is rich in everything except coal land and no county in the Mountain State can excel it in its beauty and in its facilities of making its people wealthy and happy.

In the early times the pass ways from points in the county and elsewhere beyond, were the trails made by buffaloes and Indians. At first the brush was trimmed away and the trails widened for pack-horses, then for sleds, then for wagons, as progress required.

With a tenacity worthy of a better purpose, the immediate posterity of the pioneers clung to the old paths with marked conservatism. The sons prided themselves with the idea that what was good enough for their fathers, was good enough for them. In 1836 there seems to have been a change in the dreams of the Pocahontas citizenship on the subject of a different grade of roads to and from the county.

The Warm Springs and Huntersville Turnpike was projected and completed in 1838 with Henry Harper and William Gibson, a Huntersville merchant, contractors. It was a grand highway and awoke a sensation much like our people felt on seeing the cars coming to Marlington Oct. 26, 1900. Capt. William Cackley was in the Legislature that authorized and chartered the road, and to use his own terse language in part, he had a "time of it log rolling his bill through," omitting the expletives.

The Staunton and Parkersburg pike through the upper limits of the county was made two or three years later. It was located by the celebrated Crozet, one of the great Napoleons royal engineers, who refugeed to the United States after Waterloo had made it too uncomfortable for him in the old country.

About 1854 the Huttonsville and Marlins bottom turnpike was located by Engineer Haymond. The same year he engineered the Lewisburg and Marlins bottom pike and the Greenbrier river bridge at Marlington.

Col. William Hamilton, of Randolph county, constructed the road from Huttonsville; Lemuel Chenowith, of Beverly, built the bridge in 1854-56. Capt. William Cochran, of Edray, superintended the work on the Lewisburg road. All of these enterprises were completed in 1856 and West Pocahontas was put in communication with the more favored sections of the county and the outside world.

When the Legislature decided to make the two counties Thomas Mann Randolph, a descendant of Pocahontas, "the virgin queen of a virgin world," and hence the name was given to one of the counties and Allegheny to the other. One of the most memorable days in the social and civil history of the county was the 5th March, 1822, when the first term of the County Court was held at Huntersville at the residence of John Bradshaw, the founder of the town. The house was a log tenement that stood where the "Lightner House" now stands, (1902).

Messrs. John Jordan, William Poage, James Tallman, Robert Gay, John Baxter, George Burner and Benjamin Tallman were present and presented their commissions as Justices of the Peace, signed by Governor Randolph. Col. John Baxter administered the oath of office, each member qualifying four times, in virtue of which multiplied qualification the members of the court were solemnly obligated to the faithful performance of official duties; fidelity to the commonwealth of Virginia; support the national constitution, and oppose dueling. William Poage, Jr., then administered the four oaths to Col. Baxter, and the proclamation was made that the court was duly open for business.

John Jordan qualified as High Sheriff, giving bond for $30,000, with Abram and Isaac McNeel as sureties. Josiah Beard was appointed clerk with Thomas Beard, George Poage and James Tallman bondsmen for $3,000. Johnson Reynolds, of Lewisburg, qualified as Attorney for the Commonwealth. Sampson L. Matthews was recommended to the Governor for appointment as surveyor of lands. William Hughes was appointed constable for the Levels District, with William McNeel and Robert McClintock as sureties on a bond of $500. James Cooper, constable for the Head of Greenbrier, with William Slaven and Samuel Hogsett as bondsmen.

These were the proceedings of the first day and court adjourned until 10 A. M. the following morning.

When court convened March 6, 1822, all were present except Robert Gay. John Jordan, the High Sheriff, moved the court that his son Jonathan Jordan be appointed Deputy Sheriff. The motion prevailed, granting the request, whereupon the four oaths as already mentioned were duly administered by the clerk.

James Callison, William Edmiston, John Hill, John Cochran, Alexander Waddell, John McNeill, Robert Moore, Martin Dilley,

TROUT ROCKS ON TEA CREEK.

Benjamin Arbogast, William Sharp, William Hartman and Joseph Wolfenberger were appointed overseers of the various roads in the county. Robert Gay, still out of court, was appointed commissioner of the revenues. When informed of his appointment Mr. Gay appeared in court and gave bond in $1,000 with William Cackley and John Baxter sureties, whereupon he was duly qualified.

Attorney Cyrus Curry from Lexington, Va., and Johnson Reynolds, of Lewisburg, W. Va., were licensed to practice law as the first two members of the Pocahontas bar. The next item of business transacted at this historic term of the court appears to have been the organization of the 127th Regiment of the State Militia

as a part of the Virginia military establishment. The following citizens were nominated as "fit & propa" to fill the requisite offices and the Governor and Council were requested to issue commissions to them: Colonel John Baxter: Lieutenant Colonel Benjamin Tallman: Major William Blair: Captains Boone Tallman, William Arbogast, Henry Herold, Isaac Moore, Milburn Hughes: Lieutenants Andrew G. Matthews, Robert Warwick, William Morgan, William Young and James Rhea; Ensigns Jacob Slaven, James Worlep, Samuel Young and James Callison.

Mr. Abram McNeel was recommended to the Governor for coroner and Travis W. Perkins was permitted license to conduct a hotel.

Thus organized Pocahontas took her place among the counties of Virginia and Huntersville was designated for the county seat.

A location near George Baxter's residence, in the vicinity of what is now Edray, had been selected by a committee on location and reported on favorably as the place for the county seat. Inducements by John Bradshaw were so enticing and liberal, and the citizens at the Head of Greenbrier so anxious on the subject that Huntersville prevailed and the report of the committee on location was overruled.

In 1800 the population of the region coterminous with the present limits of Pocahontas county, amounted to about one hundred and fifty-three persons, and were for the most part members of the first families that had permanent homesteads, whose heads were John McNeel, Thomas McNeill, Moses Moore, Peter Lightner, Henry Harper, John Moore, Felix Grimes, Samuel Waugh, James Waugh, Aaron Moore, Robert Moore, Timothy McCarty, Robert Gay, Jeremiah Friel, Jacob Warwick, John Slaven, John Warwick, Sampson Matthews, Josiah Brown, John Sharp, William Sharp, William Poage, John Baxter, Levi Moore, and John Bradshaw.

From the census returns it appears that in 1830 the population was 2,542; in 1840, 2,922; in 1850, 3,598; in 1860, 3,958; in 1870, 4,069; in 1880, 5,591; in 1890, 6,813; in 1900, 8,572.

In reference to the ancestry of our people it may be inferred that our citizenship is of a composite character, German, English, Irish, Scotch and French.

Such names as these, Lightner, Harper, Yeager, Arbogast,

Herold, Halterman, Burr, Siple, Sheets, Casebolt, Shrader, Burner, Sydenstricker, Varner, Hevener, Cassey, Gorman, Overland indicate German descent.

Moore, Gillispie, McCarty, McLaughlin, Coghran, Waugh, Hogsett, McNeel, Kerr, Lockridge, Drennan, Gay, McCollam, McCoy, Beard, Baxter, Slaven, Hannah, Hill, Kincaid, Irvine, McElwee, Wallace, Curry, Hamilton, Sharp, Frick, Mountcastle, imply Scotch-Irish or English-Irish ancestry.

Warwick, Matthews, Renick, Clark, Gibson, Johnson, Galford, Buckley, Kennison, Adkison, Barlow, Gatewood, Jackson, Brown, Woodell, Hull, Cooper, Duffield, Auldridge, Dunham, Boale, Sutton, Callison, indicate English ancestry.

Maupin, Ligon, Dever, Tacey, Dilley, Bussard and Lange are of French extraction.

Poage, Pritchard, Price, Rucker, denote Welch extraction.

Kee, Doyle, Kelley, Lowry, Cleenan, Scales, Rorer, leave us in no doubt that the Emerald Isle is their fatherland.

About the time when these people were on the lookout for a refuge, the Virginians felt the need of a living wall for protection against the Indian incursions from beyond the Blue Ridge. Upon its becoming known to them that Germans, Scotch-Irish and French Hugenots were willing to settle on the frontier liberal concessions were made by the Virginia Colonial authorities and it was not many years—1732 to 1750—a line of settlements were formed and the much desired living fortifications provided for. In the course of fifteen or twenty years subsequent to 1740 the more inviting sections of Monroe, Greenbrier and Pocahontas counties were occupied by a goodly number of enterprising families of the same type of people as that of the Great Virginia Valley.

The Timber-ridge settlement in Rockbridge seems to have been a fertile hive for early Pocahontas settlers to swarm from.

The editor of the Magazine regrets to say that he was compelled to ask that this article as prepared, be condensed to suit the size of the Magazine, and much valuable information, history and biography had to be omitted. But to those that would further enquire into these matters, we can say that "Historical Sketches of Pocahontas County West Virginia," published at Marlington, W. Va., by Price Bros. 1901, will furnish all that

can be known of this county, of its people, or its resources, and letters to the Rev. W. T. Price will receive polite attention. Histories like those and sketches like this article, are invaluable and every county should secure the same of its own people, and preserve the same to future generations before the same are forever lost.

GIANT'S AXE.

Charleston, W. Va., March 17, 1902.

Dear Mr. Laidley:

Some years ago when the Colonel Ben Smith mound was opened by Professor Norris, of the Smithsonian, he found the skeleton of a giant which measured seven feet eight inches in length.

This occurred about fifteen years ago. Now comes a sequel. A few days ago Joe Foster was ploughing near the mound and unearthed a stone axe. This axe is of granite, beautifully made and well preserved. It weighs *seven pounds eight ounces.* The largest ever found about here.

Dr. J. N. Mahan bought the axe, and has it in his possession. Could this have been the giant's axe?

Can't you get some of your correspondents to give an article on Indian axes, their history, sizes, &c.?

Very truly yours,

ROBERT DOUGLAS ROLLER.

To W. S. Laidley, Esq.

TWELFTH ANNUAL MEETING.

Charleston, W. Va., January 21, 1902.

The Twelfth Annual Meeting of the West Virginia Historical Society met in the Capitol at 8 p. m. to-day.

A quorum being present, the President, Dr. J. P. Hale, called the meeting to order. The minutes of the last meeting were read and approved.

The Treasurer and Secretary made their reports.

There were added to the society during the last year:

666 Miscellaneous Books.
6 West Virginia Books.
406 Pamphlets.
47 Publications of Historical Societies.
8 Foreign Publications.
29 Additions to the Museum, besides Atlas Folios, Pictures and Newspapers.

The following officers were elected:

President—Dr. J. P. Hale.

Vice-Presidents—Hon. N. E. Whittaker, First District.
" " Hon. F. M. Reynolds, Second District.
" " Mr. Charles Ward, Third District.
" " Mr. A. F. Gibbons, Fourth District.
" " Hon. David E. Johnston, Fifth District.

Secretary—Rev. Robert Douglas Roller, D. D.

Treasurer—Colonel George W. Patton.

Executive Committee—Hon. G. W. Atkinson, Major Thomas L. Broun, Judge H. C. McWhorter, Mr. Charles Ward, W. S. Laidley, Esq., S. S. Green, Esq., Joseph Ruffner, Esq., J. T. Waters, Esq., Dr. J. P. Hale.

Vol. 2. JULY, 1902. No. 3.

The West Virginia Historical Magazine Quarterly,

CHARLESTON, W. VA.

Published by the West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society.

J. P. HALE, President of the Society.
W. S. LAIDLEY, Editor.

SUBSCRIPTIONS, per year, - - - - - - - - - $1.00
SINGLE COPIES, - - - - - - - - - - .25
For Advertising, enquire of the Editor.

THE TRIBUNE COMPANY, PRINTERS,
CHARLESTON, W. VA.

CONTENTS FOR JULY, 1902.

"Coal River," a sketch by.....*Tom Swinburne.* 5
"Braddock's March Through West Virginia." *Gen. W. P. Craighill.* 16
"The Ruffners—Dr. Henry".....*Dr. W. H. Ruffner.* 36
"The Yates-Aglionby Family".....*Rev. F. K. Aglionby.* 44
"Jacob Warwick, at Point Pleasant".....*Rev. W. T. Price.* 51
"A Bit of History".....*Col. W. H. Edwards.* 59
"The Kanawha Valley in 1850".....*Hon. L. A. Martin.* 66
"A Correction as to Col. David Shepherd"..*Judge G. L. Cranmer.* 72
"Historical Sketch of Adam See, Esq.".....*Rev. C. S. M. See.* 72
"Kanawha County Records".....*W. S. Laidley.* 76
"Mason and Dixon Line".....*W. S. Laidley.* 83

The West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society.

COAL RIVER—A SKETCH.

By Tom Swinburn.

God dropped Coal River round the hills about
In West Virginia. Told it to get out
As best it could. And then forthwith began
Its search to find out where its channel ran.
Unlike the course its larger brother found,
The strenuous river New, like Esau bound
To take the precedence in coming on
The stage of active life, and then, anon,
The fatal step by which its birthwright's tost
Unto the Jacob of its fate, and 's lost.

Or rather, let us take another view,
And say—unlike its elder brother New,
Which bursting, struggling forth with choking gasp,
From out the mountain's rocky matrix' clasp.
Then sleeping in its shallow crib it lies,
Until it takes baptismal *plunge to rise.

Kanawha, flowing grandly on her way,
Upon her bosom bearing, day by day,
The riches, treasures, household gods divine,
The products of the forest and the mine,
Filched boldly from the Laban of hill,
Like Jacob's pelf of old, by modern skill.

---

*Assuming that the change of name takes place at the Falls instead of at Gauley.

Returning to my text, again I say
Coal River's is not like New River's way.
It moves in quiet peaceful gait along,
Its current running neither swift nor strong,
With sleepy mien, as though it mattered not
When, where, or how it reached the goal, or what
Should happen on the way. Does something block
Its progress, some huge weather-beaten rock
Rise up, as at the Pinnacle, and say
"Not one step farther canst thou come this way."
It hears without dismay the stern command,
Nor stops appalled before the barrier land.
No billows rise to come with angry dash
Against the stubborn wall with roaring slash.
No tearing up foundation stones, no pour
Of torrents o'er the boulders huge and hoar,
That smash like eggs the boats that dare to ride
Upon its raging, whirling, foam-lashed tide,
And grind to dust the log that chance has cast
Upon its frothy crest, and now flies past
As if some ponderous catapult did throw
A cyclopean arrow from its bow
In mythologic war, to strike some rock,
Set every fiber shivering with the shock;
Perchance be split from end to end, or broke
Like brittle pea-stick by a hatchet stroke.
Or getting balanced on a rock to ride,
Like mill-boy's sack of corn, athwart the tide,
Swings back and forth, and up and down, see-saws,
Till almost worn in two is seized by angry jaws
Of leaping billows, breaking it in two,
The halves set out to see which one gets through
The biggest chunk to land on quiet shore,
When all the swirl, and bump, and grind are o'er.

Coal River runs not so, but turns away
Upon its heel, and, smiling, seems to say,
"Oh, I can find another way, perhaps."

Then ripples round a mile or two, and slaps
The rock upon the other side. "Aha,
I'm back again, you see. No thanks. Ta ta!"
And off she goes unruffled on her way,
As though no sentry rock had bid her stay.
And on she chatters, rippling on the shore
Where frogs in spring time congregate to pour,
Into the night their hoarse and long drawn notes
From out their puffed out spotted yellow throats,
Their glad release from long hibernal sleep.
And with their mates their nightly trystings keep,
With such love songs as frogs delight to sing,
And such frog music make the valleys ring.

Then comes the wary mountaineer, and brings
His bundled pine splits, tied with bark for strings,
A splendid light his torch will make, when he,
With rolled up pants, and cautious step would see
If there should be some fat red-horse at play
Among the boulders, nosing out her way,
With many a wiggle, many a splash and shove
Between the stones that block her way above,
To some nice pebbly spot where she may lay
Her eggs where they will not become the prey
Of other fish, with that sure instinct given,
The end to which she and her mate have striven,
A place wherein their progeny might grow,
And, later, follow them to streams below,
Where deeper pools make choicer habitat.
Or he may find some lordly pike, or cat,
Or sturgeon with the shovel on his snout,
Or greedy perch a-foraging about—
No matter what, just so its back grows fins.
Then swiftly darts the gig that ever wins.
He feels the struggle of the fish to cast
Itself from off the prongs that hold it fast.
He strings it on a forked switch with joy,
And lets it dangling swing. Perhaps a boy

Stands ready with a sack to bear the prize,
And one more craves, with greedy longing eyes.
Perchance the neighbors join, and form a row
From shore to shore, their torches' ruddy glow
Tints the woods, as they in battle line
With patience trudge, and deem the sport most fine.
And exclamations quick are heard, "See there!"
"There goes one!" "Look!" "That's mine!" Well I
will swear
If that don't beat the world!" "I've saved him though."
"You talk too much, you'll scare the fish." "You go
Too fast." "Take care there, John, don't be too slow."
"Oh, pshaw, you 'tend yourself. I'll hoe my row."
"That's three for me." "By jingo, what a pike!"
"Here, let your uncle have a chance to strike."
"Now hold him, Bill, don't let him get away."
"Oh don't you fret, my gig's in there to stay.
Now mind, my boy, that this ere pike's my fish.
At breakfast my old gal will have a dish
That's fit for any king to eat." "Oh damn
The king. What's he I'd like to know? I'd slam
Him down in this deep hole, an' stick my gig
Plumb through him, an' I'd spile his fancy rig,
Jest like that feller in Ferginny's seal.
I'd down him, an' I'd make the old hound squeal."
Perchance some luckless wight unwary slips
On slimy stone, comes down kerthrash and dips
Himself and torch, if he should chance to be
The bearer of a light; but quickly he
Is on his feet again. Then rings the laugh,
And those not left in darkness gaily chaff.
The torch put out is held above the blaze
Of other torch, and once more joins its rays
With all the rest to send a flood of light
That turns to day the darkness of the night.
And shows each pebble, rock, and stretch of sand,
Above, below, around on either hand,
Whereon the bonny fish may chance to lie,

Bewildered by the glare, and does not fly.

Sometimes the water is too deep, though clear,
To handle skillfully the torch and spear.
'Tis then the shifty woodsman with delight
Brings out his flat-boat wide, or john boat light,
Or graceful, light canoe he made with skill
From some grand poplar growing on the hill,
Which, like a column holding up the sky,
Had seemed the storm and lightning to defy.
The skillful woodman slung the gleaming ax.
Its thin keen edge bit deep, yet did not tax
His strength, as stroke on stroke he swiftly plied,
And clean white chips in leaping from the side,
Between the kerf and stump a mouth left wide,
That reached o'er half-way to the other side,
As if in wonder gaping at the place
Where shortly in convulsive death embrace
The mighty arms, and thousand hands spread wide
In dying hug would clasp the mountain side.
Ah, what a fall! From dallying clouds by day,
And clapping at the stars by night, to lay
The scepter down, to grovel all along.
No storms to shout, no birds to sing among
Her branches in the spring, no tulip flowers,
No glossy leaves to shed the pelting showers.
The woodman on the other side had sunk
His blade through rough ridged bark into the trunk.
Stroke followed stroke, his breath came fast and deep.
Tremendous blows then made the fragments leap.
She tottered. Straining fibers moaned "enough,"
Swooped down to earth with one fell, mighty, sough.

As prone upon the earth, stretched out, it lay
On smaller logs, he'd put there in the way,
To hold the trunk up clear above the ground,
With axe helve measured, needful length was found,
Then chopped in two, the bark scampt off to mark

The top and bottom of the future barque,
By striking with a line in ochre dipt,
With ax notched deep, and off the juggles chipt,
Then scored to line, smoothed with broad-ax true,
And plumb, with turned up stem and stern it grew,
Then turned it up, and marked the sides so far
As not to leave the sapwood soft to mar
Its beauty and utility. And then
He chopped, and scored, and hewed to line, and when
'Twas smooth, and shapely turned at either end,
The corners rounded off with proper bend,
Three holes he bored along the center line
Drove cedar pins its thickness to define.
Then turned it o'er, as it was meant to ride.
Marked off one inch for thickness of the side,
But thicker at the ends as not to split.
And then to work with adz and auger bit
To dig the solid inside out, until
The cedar pins were reached, and then with skill
He smoothed it out, the sides were rightly pitched.
A hole he bored across its nose, then hitched
A yoke of oxen. Round the mountain's side
To some smooth slope where it might safely slide,
Held back with hick'ry withes, to place of launch.
And now he rides a vessel light, yet stanch.
A tottery thing to those not skilled to guide.
Yet in it ten big men may safely ride.
And skillful arms up swiftest chute will pole,
Or guide it safely down the roughest shoal.
But now, on platform covered o'er with sand,
The cheery pine knots blaze, and gig in hand,
He gently floats above his finny game,
And thrusts the lance, or hurls with faultless aim.

The stream proceeds with smooth facility
Naught stirs its imperturbability.
Except, perhaps, at Old Blue Tom, whose will,
When Rosecrans ran the mines at Manningsville,

Was not to let a flat-boat load of coal
Pass through his rockbound bend, and come out whole.
John Turley steered a boat, but all his skill
Would not avail to pass his d—d old mill.
It crashed against his rocks, and sank the boat.
But Turley had another one afloat,
And strove with all his might against his fate.
But Fate and Old Blue Tom would show their hate
Of innovation and another boat
Was taken from the count of those afloat.
'Tis said, how true it is I cannot say,
That Old Blue Tom sank five coal boats that day.
His doors stood wide, inviting them to sup,
He played for keeps, and never gave them up.

It may be General Rosecrans, on the whole,
Knew more of warfare than of mining coal.
We know he had a hand in some such game
In sixty one, in which he made a name
More famous than 'twas here. But this was years
Before that sad event of blood and tears.
Yet, even now, as if to keep his hands
In practice, he enrolled two hostile bands,
Among his men, to train in mimic fight.
While Rosecrans was the leader on the right.
John Dailey took the army on the left.
And John, although untrained to war, had heft,
Was quick, resourceful, acted well his part,
But lost the palm to Rosecrans greater art.

Old Manningsville is little now but name.
The land is there, the waters flow the same.
The house upon the point has disappeared.
The old log huts, and later plank ones reared
Along the bank, the mill that sawed the plank
That made the houses, and the boats that sank,
All gone. The Manning branch still sends its rill
Of rippling water from the hill. And still

Some memory of mad uncanny pranks
Of stones, and chains upon the roof, and planks
That slammed in Manning's house, and noises made
Like wagons running down the hill, a grade
So steep and rough, and through the bushes crashed,
Where wheel ne'er ran, and in the river splashed.
'Twas noised abroad, the wonder hunters came
To know the facts of this infernal game.
With ears alert, to hear the dwelling rocked,
The sounds they feared, yet anxious to be shocked.
And it was told with bated breath, and low,
How foul a murder had been done. And so,
When one more brave went up the loft to prove
That with his weight the loose planks could not move,
And when his voice in loud defiance rang,
Up went the plank with him, then with a bang
Came down again, and gave him such a scare,
He left in haste, and sought the outer air.
And thus the spirits of the dead take spite
By giving those who have not sinned a fright.

And this the ears of Billy Duncan reached,
And brought him quickly on the scene; who preached
The strictest kind of Hard Shell Baptist faith,
And feared to meet no ghost, nor haunt, nor wraith,
For what could harm a child of God, elect,
Whom all the shining hosts of heaven protect?
And he was one of those names God knows,
Because from all eternity he chose
To write them in the Book of Life, which bound
In Hard Shell Baptist covers, close around,
No reprobate breaks in, no saint breaks out.
"For which most glorious truth, we Hard Shells shout.
Then why send missionaries forth to preach
The word to heathrons damned beyond all reach?
An' why should seas, an' mountains e'er be crossed
To sarch for them what never can be lost?
A edicated ministry conspire

In vain to preach without celest'l fire.
God calls his sarvents here, an' gives 'em skill
To say jest what an' how his Spirit will."
So said Dad Duncan with his native vim.
Book learning had not spoiled God's grace in him.
He had the promise, never broke indeed,
To be supplied with words as he should need.
And though the very Devil should appear,
With horns and fiery breath, he'd never fear.
His loins well girt, his pond'rous fists clenched tight,
A strenuous ministry he planned to fight.
He dared the evil one to come in view;
But his appearance would not wait. He knew
The brazen traitor dared not show his face
Outside his cloak invisible. God's grace
Enabled him, by faith, to see the spot
Where Satan stood, though others saw him not.
But when that mighty, great big fist flew out,
To deal a solar plexus that should rout
The enemy, that cunning thief did slip,
And nimbly to the farther corner skip,
Old Duncan after him, and fairly riled,
A torrent hot as Satan's breath, and wild,
Poured out of exultation o'er the foe,
And exhortation to his flock to grow
In grace, and ever fight, with all their power
The roaring lion, ready to devour,
And keep him on the run,—"as he is now."
And wear the victor's crown upon their brow.

And just at this point, coming to the spot
Where old man Manning (who was dreaming not
The time of his ascension was so nigh,
Nor that in Duncan's powerful arms he'd fly.)
Sat humped up like a mummied figure four,
Upon a bench, 'bout midway of the floor,
He seized and heaved, with motion swift and strong,
Exclaiming as he did so—"Go along

To heaven, Brother Manning, while I stay
Behind and fight the Devil!" And away
He went, oblivious of the fact that swift
And ignominious was old Manning's shrift.
The floor above, of plank unnailed, his head
Passed through, but not his shoulders, so' tis said,
And closing on his neck, as he dropped back,
He hung and kicked like any jumping jack.
His further span of life had been but brief,
If neighbors had not come to his relief.
But naught of this did wild old Duncan see.
With both hands fighting, what a pity he
Caught not the Devil 'gainst the logs—one blow
Had rid the world of all its sin and woe.
Coal River still glides on, and recks not aught
Of Manning, Duncan, or of what they thought,
Or did. 'T has gone to sleep again, as though
It ne'er had been disturbed. Its silent flow
Unbroken, save by two small falls, below,
That do not mar its usefulness. The sight
Presented to the eagle from a hight
Above the blue, and human ken, would show
A vast broad plain of forest green below,
With here and there a patch, mere spots they'd seem,
Of farms denuded of their woods. He'd deem
The chains of ridges were but wrinkles slight
Upon Earth's face, when tickled with delight
To feel the sunshine chasing shadows o'er
Her features broad and fair; the tempest's roar
A gentle lullaby; the bending trees
The rocking of a million cribs to please,
And soothe her numerous progeny to sleep,
When countless stars their nightly vigils keep.

Like some great vine spread out upon the ground,
Coal River reaches all the region round.
Snake like, it winds, then forks, and forks again.
Its thousand branches branch again, and then

Its thousand thousand rills like tendrils grasp
The foot of every mountain in their clasp.
A mighty network spread in silvery sheen,
As though Dame Nature, mingled with her green,
Had brought from out the treasures of her mint,
And poured the melted silver without stint
In filigrees, as made by graver's skill,
Along the foot of every mount and hill,
So lavishly, without regard to cost,
In lines, serpentiform, yet never crost.
The service bloom, and later dog-wood flecks
With purest white, the red bud's purple decks
The woods in spring trac'ry arabesque.
Fall paints the leaves in colors picturesque.
While winter, tired of summer's gaudy show,
Hides all beneath her coverlet of snow.

This whole extent uncursed by any town,
Unmarred by any factory's smoky frown,
No railroad jars the startled sleeper's peace,
Nor steamboat problem—"Will it never cease?"
When once the whistle has begun to blow.
Here one might think that naught but poppies grow.
Once Peyton waked her, fifty years ahead
Of time. Coal River turned within her bed,
His locks and dams, like cobwebs, she did sweep
From off her limbs—and once more went to sleep.
In vain were all attempts to wake her up,
Or break the spell of her lethean cup.
Tho' charmers charmed so wisely, and so long,
She'd heard the singing of the siren song.
Ask Major T. L. B. what years he spent
In weaving facts and figures, wisely blent;
What stacks on stacks of pages sown broadcast.
A master necromancer holds her fast,
A mighty giant in his castle strong,
At his own pleasure only, right or wrong.
But just as winter's chains must sometime melt,

The sun of progress' waking power be felt,
Coal River will wake up for good, at last,
Her stores of wealth in miser grasp held fast,
Will have a bounteous opening, and the gleam
Of plenty pouring forth in golden stream,
To prove a blessing, or a curse, to man,
According to the use that each one can,
Or must make of it, while the grab game lasts.
And selfishness, the evil genius casts
His baleful shadow o'er the brightest scene;
So long as all our efforts only mean
"Each fellow for himself, the Devil take
The hindmost," all advances surely make
A few immensely rich, the many bare;
A million poor for every millionaire.

Before these features pass beyond our gaze,
And come the darker, then the brighter days,
When all earth's wrongs to Mighty Right shall bow,
I take a snap-shot at Coal River—Now.

June 8, 1902.

A PAPER REFERRING TO THE MARCH OF BRADDOCK'S TROOPS FROM ALEXANDRIA TO ATTACK FORT DUQUESNE IN 1755, AND INDICATING PARTICULARLY THE ROUTE OF THE CONSIDERABLE PORTION WHICH PASSED THROUGH WHAT IS NOW JEFFERSON COUNTY, WEST VIRGINIA.

BY WM. P. CRAIGHILL.

An address was once delivered in my presence in which reference was made to the march of the army of Braddock to the Ohio river with the expectation of capturing the French Fort DuQuesne, and the fact was ignored that a large part of his troops passed through what is now Jefferson county in West Virginia. I was thus led several years ago to prepare the following paper which I hope will be of interest to those who care to know some of the details of the early history of the State.

In 1855 there was published by the Historical Society of Pennsylvania a history of Braddock's expedition against Fort DuQuesne, edited by Mr. Winthrop Sargent. At page 198 of that volume is printed a map showing in detail the part of the line of march from the mouth of the Little Cacapon river to the fatal field at Turtle Creek a short distance from Pittsburgh. The Little Cacapon is one of the tributaries of the Potomac from the Virginia side. The map of Sargent is reproduced in Loudermilk's History of Cumberland.

Braddock's march was made in 1755, nearly 150 years ago. Many years later, in the first third of the 19th century, the U. S. Govern-

GENERAL BRADDOCK.

ment built a highway called the National road, (a fine one for those days) which passed through some of the same country.

Still later the Baltimore & Ohio company built a railroad connecting Baltimore with Pittsburg, also passing through Cumberland. The Metropolitan Branch from Washington towards Frederick follows a part of the route of one of Braddock's detachments. His whole force did not pursue the same route from Alexandria to Cumberland.

A comparison of these different routes connecting nearly the

same points but under such different circumstances in the development of the country, seems an interesting one, but I will not dwell upon it in this paper which I wish to be brief.

Gen. Braddock's expedition was organized at Alexandria, Va. Before proceeding to describe what I fell quite sure was the route taken by at least a large part of his army (so called) from Alexandria, I will briefly mention a few of the leading events that preceded and were a part of the campaign.

Braddock reached Hampton Roads at the mouth of Chesapeake Bay February 20, 1755. The regular British troops which came over about the same time were sent up to Alexandria and there quartered. That, however, was not the original intention, as appears from the General's order of Feb. 28, dated at Williamsburg, Va., in which directions were given for the distribution of the troops at various points in Virginia and Maryland from Fredericksburg on the Rappahannock to Williamsport on the Potomac. The latter is called Conogogee in the orders. This name survives under the form of Conecocheague Creek, at the mouth of which Williamsport, Md., is now situated. This information as to the proposed distribution of troops is derived from the Orderly Book of Braddock, of which the original is in the Congressional Library at Washington City. The hand-writing of Washington appears in it in more than one place. These orders are also reproduced in Loudermilk's History of Cumberland.

Braddock went to Williamsburg, then the Capital of Virginia, for an interview with Governor Dinwiddie. He had been preceded by Sir John St. Clair who arrived about six weeks before him. This officer seems to have performed the duty of Q. M. General as well as being engineer of roads. He made a reconnoissance of the country as far west as what is now Cumberland in company with Gov. Sharpe of Maryland. Fort Cumberland at that place, first called Fort Mt. Pleasant, had already been built in the winter of 1754-55 and was occupied by troops from South Carolina, Virginia and Maryland. A contingent was expected from Pennsylvania but did not arrive. St. Clair descended the Potomac in a canoe as far as Alexandria and then went to meet Braddock at Williamsburg.

St. Clair proposed to use the Potomac as a means of transport for supplies, and as a rule water-carriage is cheaper and the best when

great speed is not requisite. But the result showed that St. Clair was mistaken in his estimate of the availability of the Potomac for that purpose.

Gov. Sharpe of Maryland evidently was a man who had ideas of his own and did not agree with St. Clair on this point, for in his letter of Feb. 9, 1755, to Gen. Braddock before the march began, he says "The number of shoals and falls in the Potomac showed it to be of no service for transporting either artillery or baggage." Sharpe's judgment was correct, for the bulk of the supplies was actually sent in wagons.

Washington doubtless agreed with Sharpe, for he was one of the first, perhaps the very first, to recommend the construction of the Chesapeake & Ohio Canal which still follows the Potomac and replaces it as a line of traffic from the mouth of Rock Creek to Cumberland. It is the habit of many to speak in derision of this canal as a route for transporting freights, but those who do so would not if they knew how useful and valuable it might be if freed from all political interference and arranged to the proper requirements and capabilities of the present state of engineering skill.

A Congress of the Governors of several of the Colonies met the General at Alexandria April 14th, instead of Annapolis as had been expected, but Braddock did visit Annapolis to see Sharpe.

After the meeting with the governors the General selected Winchester as the place to which his letters should be sent. Winchester was then a small town but it was important as one of the posts on the Indian frontier of that day. It was well known to Washington who had often been there and after Braddock's defeat built Fort Loudon, the remains of which are still visible in the town.

April 24, ten days after the Congress of Governors, Braddock was at Frederick, Md. There he had interviews with Washington and Franklin. The former he had also probably met before at Alexandria and Williamsburg, and they had had some epistolary correspondence. It is likely they had been also to Leesburg together.

St. Clair by the General's direction had offered Washington a place on his staff which was accepted.

About this time there seems an uncertainty among the historians as to dates. Sargent says that Washington reported to Braddock at

Frederick and his appointment on the staff was there published May 10.

In another place Braddock is said by Sargent to have been on the 10th of May at the foot of Will's Mountain on his way to Fort Cumberland.

Sparks says "Braddock marched to the interior and was joined by Washington at Winchester where the latter assumed the station and duties of Aid."

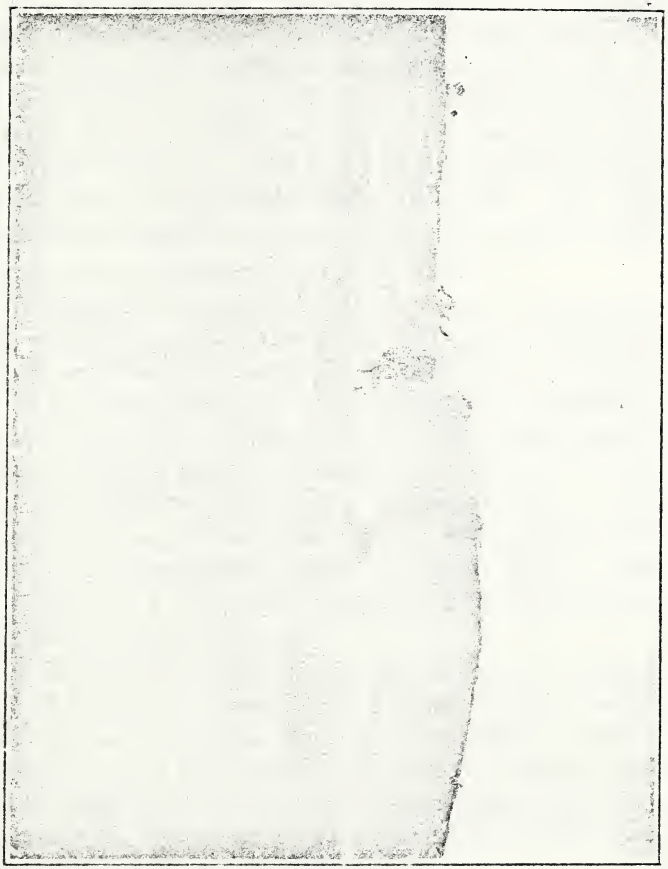
However uncertain we may thus be as to the day and place where Washington entered upon his duty as Aid, the fact remains. In a letter to Fairfax dated Winchester May 5, 1755, Washington himself says "I overtook the General at Fredericktown. Thence we proceeded to this place," Winchester. The official order, however, which placed Washington on the staff is dated May 10 at Fort Cumberland. The reason why he was sought by Braddock was doubtless the thorough knowledge he had of the country between Alexandria and Pittsburgh and the high reputation he had already gained, though so young, being only 23 years of age.

Washington had obtained much of his knowledge while engaged as surveyor of the large area of land belonging to Lord Fairfax in the Shenandoah Valley and westward. He had also been through the country as far west as the site of Fort DuQuesne more than once.

The residence of Lord Fairfax, whom Washington had served as surveyor, was in what is now Clark County, Virginia, near a little town called Millwood not very distant from Winchester. Washington had thus become very familiar with all the country from the Potomac near Harpers Ferry and along the Shenandoah river and as far as Winchester and west of it.

He became the possessor of much land in what is now Jefferson County in West Virginia, bordering the Potomac and Shenandoah rivers. It went to the descendants of his brothers after his death and some of it still remains in the hands of Washingtons.

There is no reasonable doubt that Braddock himself finally crossed the Potomac at Williamsport and went thence direct to Winchester. The testimony of Washington confirms that, as does also the following extract from a letter of Governor Sharpe to Lord Baltimore dated May 22d, in which he says "The General did not



FORT NECESSITY.

leave Frederick until the first of May when I waited on him over Potomac on the way to Winchester."

The tradition of the country says Braddock was in Leesburg, Va., which was on the direct route of that day from Alexandria, where his army was collected, to Winchester. Howe in his History of Virginia says "Braddock remained in Leesburg several days. The house he occupied stood on Loudon street. Washington who was also there put up in that portion of the town." And it is very reasonable to suppose Braddock visited Leesburg in his examination of the country through which his troops might pass, as Winchester was one of his first objective points and Leesburg was on the way to Winchester from Alexandria. The railroad from Alexandria through Leesburg of this day reaches nearly to Winchester and doubtless will go there finally.

Washington had been from Alexandria to Winchester quite often, but not by the way of Frederick, Maryland. And he did not approve the Frederick route, as is shown by the following extract from his letter previously quoted, of May 5 to Fairfax, where he says, "You will naturally conclude that to pass through Maryland when no object required it was an uncommon and extraordinary route for the General and for Colonel Dunbar's regiment. The reason however was obvious. Those who promoted it had rather that the communication should be opened that way than through Virginia, but I believe that the eyes of the General are now open and the imposition detected."

It is highly probable it was the influence of Sharpe that took any of Braddock's command via Frederick, which was off the direct and natural line of that day from Alexandria to Cumberland. The Pennsylvanians found fault with both the Virginia and Maryland routes and claimed that the army should have been brought up the Delaware to Philadelphia and started thence on its westward way. Doctor Franklin was of that opinion.

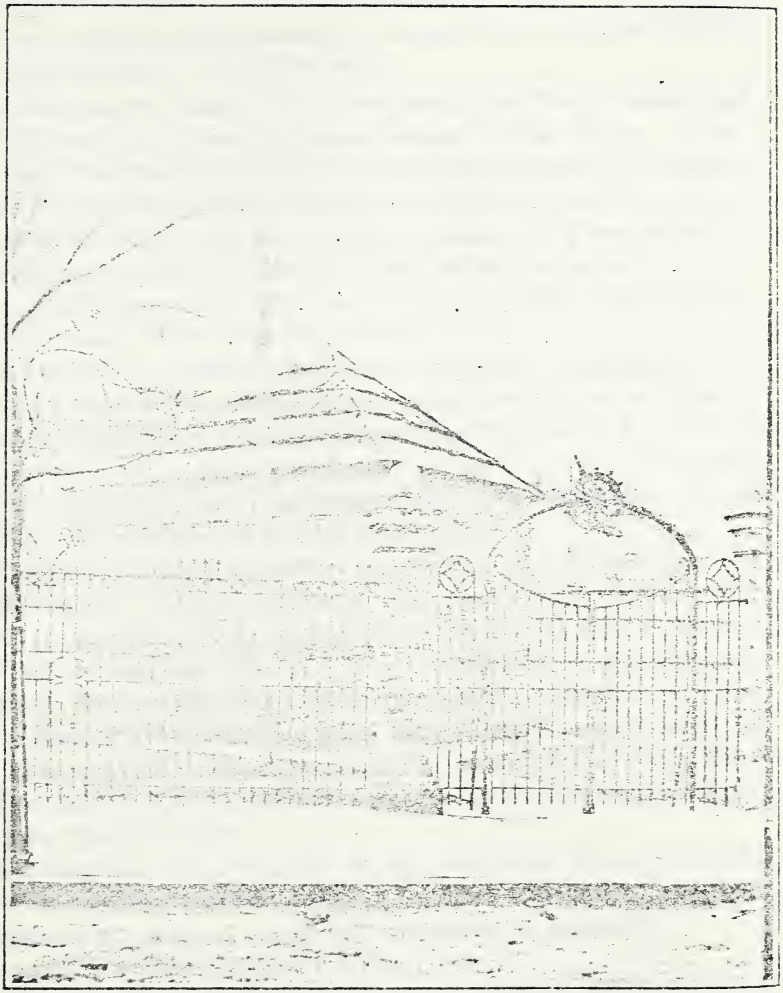
The doctor was however of great assistance to Braddock whom he met at Frederick. The General did not find the means of transport there he thought necessary and Franklin procured many wagons and horses for him. The deficiency in wagons may have been due to the expectation of St. Clair to use boats on the Potomac.

Franklin was not sanguine as to the success of the expedition as

he soon saw how self-confident and obstinate Braddock was and how inappropriate were his expected methods of dealing with Indians on the field of battle and elsewhere. Braddock had perfect confidence in his regular troops who had a great prestige (and justly so) as to their value when pitted against the regulars of other European nations. But Indians did not fight like regular soldiers and Franklin and Washington knew that fact well. Braddock would have fared far better had he heeded the advice Franklin gave him, as appears from the following extract from Franklin's autobiography. "In conversation with him one day, he was giving me some account of his intended progress." Said he, "After taking Fort DuQuesne, I am to proceed to Niagara, and having taken that, to Frontenac, if the season will allow time, and I suppose it will, for DuQuesne can hardly detain me above three or four days; and then I see nothing that can obstruct my march to Niagara."

Dr. F. remarks, "Having before revolved in my mind the long line his army must make in a march by a very narrow road to be cut through the woods and bushes, and also what I had read of a former defeat of 1500 French who invaded the Iroquois Country, I had conceived some doubts and fears for the event of the campaign." But I only ventured to say to the General "To be sure, Sir, if you arrive well before DuQuesne with these fine troops, so well provided with artillery, that place, not completely fortified, and as we hear with no very strong garrison, can probably make but a short resistance. The only danger I apprehend of obstruction to your march is from the ambuscades of Indians, who, by constant practice, are dextrous in laying and executing them; and the slender line, near four miles long, which your army must make, may expose it to be attacked by surprise in its flanks, and to be cut like a thread into several pieces, which, from their distance, cannot come up in time to support each other." The General smiled at my ignorance and replied, "These savages may indeed be a formidable enèmy to your raw American Militia, but upon the King's regular and diciplined troops, sir, it is impossible they should make any impression."

The complete overthrow of Braddock's regulars by the irregular Indians and the French had a great effect on the minds of Franklin and others as to the supposed invincibility of British regulars and



POWDER MAGAZINE AT FORT PITT.

went far to making them more confident of success in the contest with them which we call the War of the Revolution. In his autobiography Franklin incidentally remarks farther, referring to Braddock's campaign: "This whole transaction gave us Americans the first suspicion that our exalted ideas of the prowess of British regulars had not been well founded."

Washington was sent back by Braddock from Fort Cumberland to Williamsburg to bring up some money for the troops. In returning to his chief he did not use the unnatural route by Frederick which required two crossings of the wide Potomac, but he went up by Leesburg and Winchester without crossing the Potomac at all. And this would beyond doubt have been the best route for the whole of Braddock's command. Much of it did go that way from Alexandria by a route I will presently indicate.

On a previous occasion, when sent out in 1753, 2 years before by Governor Dinwiddie as a messenger to the French commanders in the west, Washington went via Alexandria, Winchester, &c., but not by Frederick, Md. And in 1754 when he went on Fry's expedition he left Alexandria for Cumberland with two companies, but he went by Winchester and not by Frederick.

Washington's diary of the Fry expedietion of 1754 was captured by the French. In the versions of it in the writings of Toner and Ford, the record from April 3 to 19 is omitted and that is the portion which describes the road from Alexandria to Cumberland. However the memoranda by Washington of his expenditures in the expedition of 1754 give very plain indications of certain parts of his route on that occasion, and show that he took a road from Alexandria through Loudon County, crossing the Shenandoah river not far from Harpers Ferry.

Washington's own narrative of the campaign which was published in the May number, 1893, of Scribner's Magazine says very little about the route of march and nothing as to its location.

I quote now from Sargent's History.

"It may not be amiss to trace here the exact line of route which they followed. By St. Clair's advice the army was to start from Alexandria in two divisions; 1 regiment and a portion of the stores to Winchester, Va., whence a new road was nearly completed to Fort Cumberland; and the other regiment with the remainder by way of

Frederick in Maryland. A portion of the stores were to be conveyed in part by water-carriage on the Potomac. Accordingly, on the 8th and 9th of April, the Provincials and 6 companies of the 44th regiment under Sir Peter Halkett, set out for Winchester; Lieut. Col. Gage and 4 companies remaining to escort the artillery. April 18th, the 48th under Col. Dunbar, set out for Frederick, detaching a company to the Conococheague to expedite the transmission of stores gathered there. Arriving at Frederick, however, it was found there was no road through Maryland to Will's Creek (Cumberland) and Dunbar was accordingly compelled on the 1st of May to cross the Potomac at the mouth of the Conococheague and strike the Winchester route."

Washington in a letter from Fort Cumberland to Major John Carlyle May 14th, 1755, says, "Col. Dunbar's regiment was obliged to recross at Connogogee and come down within 6 miles of Winchester to take the new road to Will's Creek, which, from the absurdity of the thing, was laughable enough."

I insert here one or two short extracts from Irving. He says. "Braddock set off from Fredericktown attended by his staff and guard of light horse for Will's Creek by way of Winchester, the road along the north side of the Potomac not being yet made." And Washington is reported as remarking, "This gave him a good opportunity of seeing the absurdity of the route and damning it most heartily." He is referring to the proposed road from Conococheague up the Potomac.

I resume the account by Sargent, of Dunbar's march.

"May 5th he crossed the Cacapon: May 8th, he was again ferried over the Potomac to Maryland from a spot hard by the mouth of Cacapon which has since that day borne the name of Ferry Fields. Thence along the river side, through the Shawnee Oldtown, the dwelling place of the notorious Cresap, Dunbar passed through the Narrows at the foot of Will's Mountain. At high noon, on the 10th of May while Halket's command was alrready encamped at their common destination, the 48th was startled by the passage of Braddock and his staff through their ranks, with a body guard of light horse galloping on either side of his travelling chariot, in haste to reach Fort Cumberland."

The entire force which left Cumberland for the Ohio consisted

of 2150 men, including Indians, teamsters, &c.; not a very large army.

The advanced guard, 600 men, left May 30th to clear out a road. The army followed in three divisions—1st under Halket June 7th, 2nd under Gage June 8th, 3rd under Dunbar June 10th. Braddock remained until all had gone.

Orme, an aid of Braddock, in his journal says. "It was above a month before the necessary ammunition and stores could be transported from Rock Creek to Conogogee, and as the Potomac was not then navigable, even by the smallest canoes, new difficulties arose in providing wagons to send them to Fort Cumberland. As no road had been made to Will's Creek on the Maryland side of the Potomac, the 48th regiment, which had crossed from Alexandria at Rock Creek and reached Frederick, was obliged to cross the Potomac at Conegogee and fall into the Virginia road near Winchester. The General ordered a bridge built over the Antietam. Col. Dunbar marched with his regiment from Frederick April 28th. About this time the bridge over the Opecon was finished for the passage of the artillery and floats were built on all the rivers and creeks."

"The General set out for Winchester and thence proceeded to Fort Cumberland where he arrived May 10th, and also the 48th regiment (Dunbar's) which had come by Frederick."

Sir Peter Halket with 6 companies of the 44th, 2 independent companies of the Virginia troops were already encamped at this place" (Cumberland), having come by the better route.

Halket's command marching by the Winchester route seem to have had no difficulty. All the trouble was with Dunbar's, as we hear nothing of Halket's from Alexandria via Winchester.

The troops that went by Frederick were ferried across the Potomac at the mouth of Rock Creek which now separates Washington and Georgetown.

The route and march of each day are prescribed in orders dated April 27th, 1755, which I have inserted below:

"Frederick, Sunday, April 27th, 1755. "Colo. Dunbar's Regiment is to march ye 29th and to proceed to Will's Creek agreeable to ye following route:

	Miles
"29th from Frederick on ye road to Conogogee,..	17
"30th from that halting place to Conogogee.....	18

"1st from Conogogee to John Evan's..... 16
"2nd. Rest
"3rd to the Widow Baringer..... 18
"4th To George Polls..... 9
"5th To Henry Enock's..... 15
"6th Rest.
"7th To Cox's at ye mouth of little cacapon.... 12
"8th To Colo Cresaps..... 8
"9th To Will's Creek..... 16

Total..... 129

"The men are to take from this place three days provisions; at Conogogee they will have more, at the Widow Baringers 5 days, at Colo Cresap's one or more days, and at all these places Oats or Indian Corn must be had for the Horses, but no Hay.

"At Conogogee the troops cross the Potomack in a Float; when the troops have marched 14 miles from John Evans they are to take the new road to their Right, which leads from Opecon Bridge.

"When the troops have marched 14 miles from George Polle's, they come to the great Cacapepon; they are to pass that River in a Float; after passing they take the road to the Right.

"If the water in the little Cacapepon is high the Troops must encamp opposite to Cox's.

"At the mouth of the little Cacapepon the Potomack is to be crossed in a float. Four miles beyond this they cross Town Creek; if the Float should not be finished, Canoes will be Provided."

The route of Sir Peter Halket's command from Alexandria to Winchester is also laid down in orders of April 11th, 1755, and the order is given below.

"Alexandria, Friday, April 11th, 1755.

"March route of Sir Peter Halket's Regiment from the Camp at Alexandria.

"To Winchester .....Miles
(Shenandoah)
"To ye old Court House..... 18
"To Mr. Coleman's on Sugar Land Run where there is Indian corn..... 12
"To Mr. Miners..... 15

"To Mr. Thompson, ye Quaker, wh ye is 3,000 wt corn 12
"To Mr. They's 17 ye ferry of Shann 12..... 17
"From Mr. They's to Winchester..... 23

This last distance is evidently from the Shenandoah to Winchester.

"If the bridge should not be laid over the Opecon, Canoes will be provided for the troops."

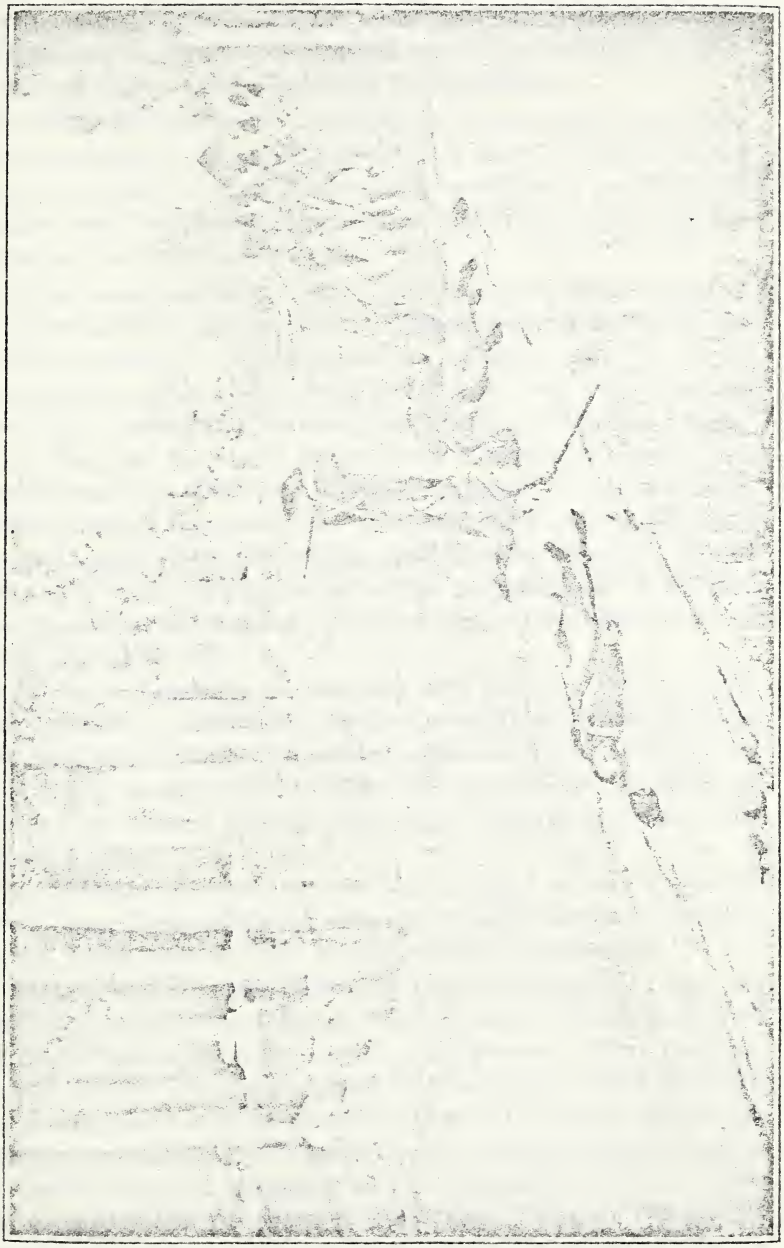
"As soon as the Artillery arrives at Winchester a Detachment of their Regiment and whatever part you shall judge proper of the Rangers must be ordered to march with the Artillery to Wills Creek."

"But if the road should be cut from the bridge on the Opeckon to Bear Garden and is made passable for ye Artillery, it is then to go along that road and not by Winchester and your Detachment from Winchester must join them at Henry Enochs. A report will be made to you whether this road is passable or not."

One of the first points in the march of the troops after crossing the Potomac was the site of the old Naval Observatory near the mouth of Rock Creek, Washington, which was formerly called Camp Hill and was known by tradition as having been occupied by some of Braddock's troops.

Dunbar's route from the mouth of Rock Creek towards Frederick naturally followed the valley of that stream and coincided nearly with the present pike from Georgetown towards Rockville and with the Metropolitan branch of the B. & O. road.

After leaving the mouth of the Little Cacapon where the great difficulties and delays of the march began, the troops stuck pretty closely to the Potomac. This enabled them to have a good and constant supply of water, a great consideration at all times for an army. This same need of water led to the sinking of deep wells inside Forts Cumberland at Cumberland and Loudon at Winchester. These wells remain to this day. The site of Fort Necessity where Washington surrendered to the French before Braddock's campaign, was located on rather low ground because there was a good stream near it. At these forts it was not safe to go outside for water as Indians were always lurking around ready to pick off the unwary.



BRADDOCK'S DEFEAT.

I will conclude by indicating in some detail the route of the considerable part of the command which passed up through Virginia and West Virginia from Alexandria to Winchester.

The "Old Braddock road" is well known by that name near Alexandria to this day. Gen. McDowell in his order of march for his troops to the field of Bull Run in 1861 mentions it as "The Old Braddock road which runs between the Little River pike and the Orange and Alexandria Railroad."

A friend near Alexandria, Mr. L. M. Blackford, the principal of the Episcopal High School, says: "The road now known as the Braddock road is one which leaves the Leesburg turnpike at the north-eastern corner of the high school tract and runs west between these premises and Manokin, the former residence of Cassius F. Lee, Esq., out for a mile or two until it becomes gradually impassable from long disuse and is hardly traceable. From the north-eastern corner of the school tract it crosses the Leesburg pike, and goes to Alexandria by the residences of Doctor Slaughter, Doctor Rust and others, entering town in the neighborhood of Colross. After it crosses the Leesburg pike, however, it seems best known as the old Mush-Pot road."

A friend in Leesburg, an old man, who has been over the road himself, writes: "Braddock's Road was cut through the primitive forest within half a mile of Leesburg on the north side of Tuscarora stream, then on south side of Dry Mill, on over the mountain at Clark's Gap, thence through Keys' Gap between Hillsboro and Harpers Ferry."

The Shenandoah river was crossed at what is now known as Keyes' Ford. Thence the road went up through the present town of Charles Town, near Summit Point and on to Winchester.

I have myself been over this road from Leesburg, Va., over the Blue Ridge by the way of Keyes' Gap, across the Shenandoah river at Keyes' Ford in my native county of Jefferson in West Virginia, through Charles Town and up towards Winchester; and I have seen an old map made in 1734, on which the road is shown that Braddock's troops passed over 21 years later. A country place in Jefferson County, long in possession of the Washingtons, has for more than a century had the name of "Braddock," because Braddock's troops were in camp upon it, and a shallow well remains to this day

which was dug by them. The "Old Braddock road" can also be traced near Winchester, Virginia, and elsewhere. The Gap and Ford of Keyes of this day had then the name of Vestal, a name used by Washington in his writings.

One very striking advantage of the route preferred by Washington was that it avoided a double crossing of the great Potomac river near Alexandria and again at Williamsport, whereas the much smaller Shenandoah was easily passed at Keyes' Ford.

De Haas mentions the sash of Braddock on which he was carried from the field. The present writer saw this sash in Winchester, Va., several years ago, through the courtesy of Mrs. Betty Taylor Dandridge. She had received it from her father, General Taylor, who died as President of the United States. The sash is very large and made of red silk. It has on it the date of 1707. The stains of blood on it are distinctly visible. The report of De Haas is that in 1846, "a gentleman of New Orleans" had the sash. His wish was that it should be presented to the soldier who was most distinguished in the "recent campaign" on the Rio Grande. Thus it came into the possession of General Taylor after his victories at Buena Vista, Resaca de la Palma and Monteray.

After prolonged and diligent effort by the present writer it has been ascertained that the sash passed into the possession of General Washington at the death of Braddock in 1755. From him Nellie Custis received it. She became Mrs. Lewis, and one of her daughters married Colonel E. G. W. Butler, of Louisiana, and he was "the gentleman of New Orleans" who presented the sash to Genl. Taylor.

In a letter to the present writer, Feb. 14, 1902, Secretary Langley of the Smithsonian Institution of Washington, states that this famous sash, now nearly 200 years old, is deposited at that institution in the collections of the Society of Colonial Dames.

It seems not out of place to add a few words concerning Braddock himself.

Rev. Mr. Lambing, of Pittsburg, in his notes to his translation of the Register of Fort DuQuesne, says, "when or where Edward Braddock was born there is no means of ascertaining.

"As may be judged from the date of his first commission, he must have been born towards the close of the 17th century—October 11th, 1710, he entered the army with the rank of Ensign in the

Grenadier Company of the Coldstream Guards and on the 1st of August, 1716, was appointed a Lieutenant.

"He rose from one grade to another until he was rewarded for his bravery at the battle of Fontenoy, May 11th, 1745, by being appointed First Major of his regiment. Other promotions followed until December 21st, 1754, when he sailed for America as Commander in Chief of all the troops that were to operate against the French."

He was wounded on the field of his defeat July 9th, 1755, and died Sunday the 13th, at 8 p. m., near the Great Meadows.

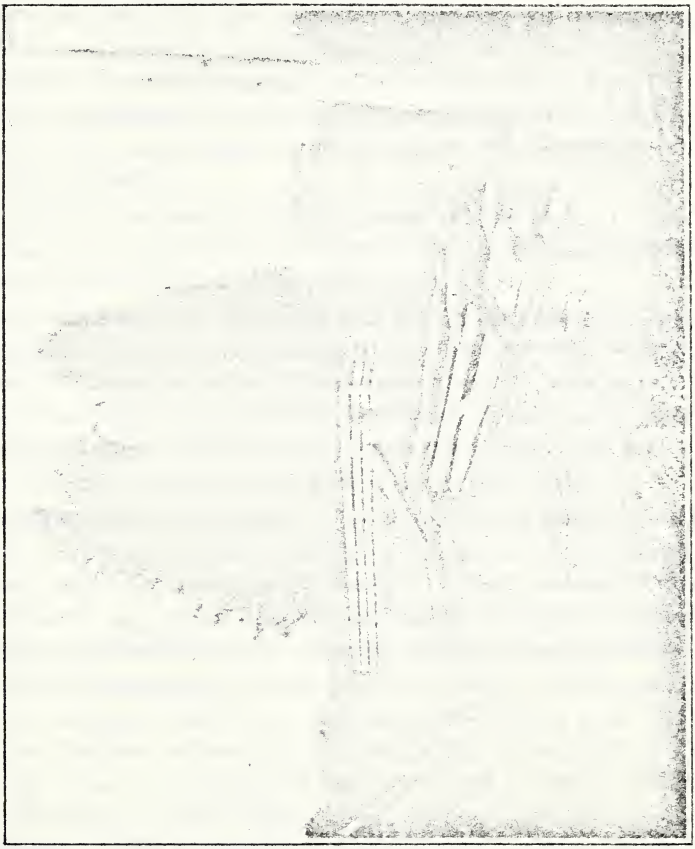
Winthrop Sargent says, "He was buried decently but privately in a spot purposely selected, in the middle of the road, nor was care spared to close evenly the mouth of his grave, and to pass the troops and the train over the place in order to efface any guide-marks by which sacreligious and hostile hands might be enabled to disturb and insult his remains. But this disgusting feat was reserved for other days and other men.

"It is probable the services for the dead were read by Washington, as the Chaplain was wounded, and Washington was the only active member left of his military family."

In 1823, some laborers, working on the National Road, exposed his remains, still distinguishable by their military trappings. Day, in his Historical Papers about Pa., says, "One and another took several of the most prominent bones and the others were reinterred under the tree on the hill. Mr. Stewart, of Uniontown, afterward collected the scattered bones and sent them, it is believed, to Peale's Museum in Philadelphia."

Loudermilk, in his History of Cumberland, says, "The original grave of Braddock was about two miles west of Fort Necessity," and that the bones carried off were "only several of the small bones of the hand." The remains were then carried to a point about one hundred and fifty yards eastward and buried in a field, at the foot of a large oak tree some twenty five yards from the road." Hon. A. Stewart had a board nailed to the tree to mark the spot. In 1871, the tree having decayed and fallen, some English tourists had the place enclosed by a wooden fence.

De Haas, in his history of Indian wars in West Virginia, has a foot-note in which he says "many years since the remains of Brad-



BRADDOCK'S GRAVE.

dock were removed to England and now rest with the quiet sleepers of Westminster Abbey." Loudermilk later says, "this information is undoubtedly erroneous." "These remains undoubtedly still lie in the place described and no inhabitant of the country has ever heard of their removal to England." The present writer has recently had inquiries made by a reliable person in London, who says there is no record of the removal of Braddock's remains to Westminster, and there is no monument there to his memory as some supposed. Loudermilk says, it was the intention of Washington to erect a monument to Braddock, but in 1784, when he visited the place for the purpose and made diligent search for the grave he was unable to find it.

Horace Walpole summed up the character of Braddock in these words: "desperate in his fortunes, brutal in his behavious, obstinate in his sentiments, he was still intrepid and capable."

Parkman, in his work on Montcalm and Wolfe, calls him the "gallant bull-dog." In another place he says, "to Braddock was assigned the chief command of all the British forces in America, and a person worse fitted could scarcely have been found. His experience had been ample and none could doubt his courage, but he was profligate, arrogant, perverse and a bigot to military rules."

Sherman Day says of Braddock, "he was a brave man and had had much experience in military life but was naturally haughty, imperious and self-complacent, disclaiming to receive counsel from his subordinates, and, what was less excusable, despising his enemies. These peculiarities of his personal character were undoubtedly the cause of his losing his army and his own life. While on his march, Col. Croghan from Pa., a distinguished frontier man, with one hundred Indians, offered his services to aid the expedition by scouring the forest in advance of the army and bringing intelligence of the enemy's movements.

"Washington, with his peculiar modesty and courtesy, advised him to accept this aid; his advice was apparently listened to, but the Indians were treated so coldly that they withdrew in disgust. Braddock not only despised Indians but all their modes of fighting, denouncing the provincial troops for fighting Indians from behind trees and insisting upon their coming out into the open like Englishmen. The provincial troops were not dastards; and could

they with their favorite champion, have had their own way, the fortunes of that fatal field would have been changed.'

Sargent says: "In considering the conduct of this battle, it is easy to perceive how readily victory might have been lured to perch upon an opposite banner. Had the American method of Indian fighting been followed from the outset, the whole plan of campaign would have been changed. It is ever an invidious task to point out how a lost field might have been won."

The hind-sight of most men is better than their foresight. Mr. Sargent indicates what Braddock should have done and this advice *after the fact* seems wise; but when a General is surprised and his troops are thrown into a panic, the case is very different and nobody need wonder at anything that may take place.

I have no doubt he would not have been surprised had he heeded the sage caution of Doctor Franklin, and the wise advice of Washington, *but he did not,* and that summed up the whole matter.

It has always been asserted that Braddock was shot and disabled by one of his own men, and the evidence seems conclusive that the report is correct. De Haas says there were two brothers named Joseph and Thomas Fausett among Braddock's soldiers, and that Hon. Andrew Stewart of Uniontown, told him he knew Thomas Fausett who admitted that he shot Braddock because he struck his brother with his sword for taking to a tree in the fight with the Indians which was the proper thing to do under such circumstances, and because he, Fausett, felt sure that, if Braddock continued to command, not a man would be left. Other witnesses testify to the same thing.

THE RUFFNERS.

IV. HENRY: SECOND ARTICLE.

By Dr. W. H. Ruffner.

Dr. Henry Ruffner's career as professor, and afterward president of Washington College, began in May 1819 and ended in June, 1848. This was the prime section of his life, and was crowded with labors. Though modest and peaceable in his nature, he constantly labored even against opposition for the improvement of the College. Within two years he succeeded in doubling the amount of study required

for the bachelor's degree, the time remaining the same. Thus the curriculum was placed on a level with that of the best colleges in the United States. Owing to the loose discipline existing at the time his improved course was not perfectly adhered to; but he waited in patience for the triumph he felt sure would come.

Meanwhile, however, dark and troublous times had to be passed through. In 1829 the Board of Trustees passed a resolution which caused all three of the members of the faculty to resign. Mr. Ruffner was promptly re-elected, and the college placed in his hands with authority to employ assistance until the institution could be re-organized. He was approached with regard to his acceptance of the presidency at this time and also on subsequent occasions, but owing to personal and other reasons, he felt that his time had not come, and he forbade the use of his name. Two other presidents were brought in for a short time, but in 1836 Mr. Ruffner was unanimously requested by the Board of Trustees to accept the presidency; which he did. From that time the college moved on a higher plane. A fourth professor was added to the faculty; a liberal course of study was carried out; a stricter discipline enforced, the number of students increased, and a new spirit of study pervaded the institution.

The President's devotion to his duties was remarkable. At 5 o'clock every morning he was in his office at college, and there he remained until 9 at night, only visiting his home for meals and lodging. His own hard study, his classes, and the duties of administration, soon began to pull down his naturally powerful constitution. This forced upon him the thought that at no distant day he must relax his labors, or must resign. An approaching crisis in his Kanawha interests inclined him toward the latter alternative. He was the owner of the original Salt Spring lot on which had been erected the first furnace, but for several years the Salt Company had been paying him a "dead rent;" to-wit, had paid him fifteen hundred dollars a year not to make salt, with a view of preventing overproduction. This rent was soon to cease by the dissolution of the company, and the conditions were favorable for salt-making.

These and some other considerations caused him to give notice to the College Board of Trustees at a meeting in January, 1841, that at their June meeting he would hand in his resignation. Earnest

protest was made at once against the president's resignation and a special meeting of the Board was ordered for Feb. 22, to consider the subject. On that day the Board met, and passed strong resolutions commending the president's official services, and pressing him to remain. An addition of $200 was made to his salary. A committee was sent with the resolutions. The students also held a full meeting, at which they adopted a most kind and complimentary address to Dr. Ruffner, urging, even begging him not to resign. To these appeals were added a strong social influence. The end of it all was that as a matter of feeling more than of judgment he consented to remain—a decision which he never ceased to regret.

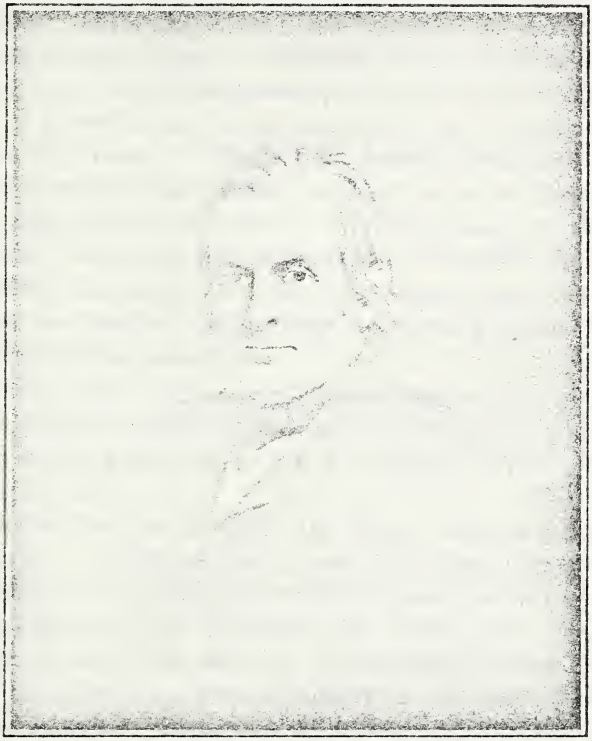
One of the first evil consequences was the loss within one year of $5,000 in Kanawha by the mismanagement of incompetent agents. He found too that he had lost much of his enthusiasm in his college work, and soon a succession of troubles arose in connection with outside affairs; which altogether laid upon his shoulders heavier burdens than he had ever been called to bear before. But he took up every burden as he came to it, and allowed himself no rest except on Sundays when he rode to the country and preached to the Monmouth or Timber Ridge congregation, and in vacation, which gave him opportunities for travel and especially for visiting Kanawha, which all his life he loved with boyish affection.

He relieved his mind occasionally by writing literary articles, and by attending the Saturday night debates of the Franklin Society; a high grade association, which was long maintained in Lexington by the most enlightened of the citizens. Here were tested all the great subjects appropriate to such a society. Between 1841 and 1848 occurred in Lexington three great controversies, two of which were discussed at great length in the Franklin Society. The other was ecclesiastical, but was taken up by the people of the town and county.

One of the controversies had reference to the proper mission of the Virginia Military Institute. The one that created the most excitement was the "Skinner War"—a war between the pastor of the Lexington Church and his congregation, who had asked him to resign; which affair of course was carried into the Presbytery, and which spread into the community. It was a long war and a very acrimonious one. Finally came the great debate in the Franklin

Society on the question whether it was desirable to divide the State of Virginia by a line running on the crest of the Blue Ridge Mountain. Into all these agitations was Dr. Ruffner immersed by the force of circumstances.

It was necessary to define the relations between the College and



DR. H. RUFFNER.

the Military Institute, and the college president could not avoid the taking of a leading part. The whole subject came up also in the Franklin Society, and there he made one of these great speeches which could only be called phenomenal.

In the Skinner case he was required by his Presbytery to lead in the prosecution of the rebellious pastor—a Scotchman of the Highland type. Ah! this was the toughest of the jobs required of him in his whole life, and it was a work of months.

Closely following (1847) came the question of the division of the State. The Western politicians were bitter against East Virginia for using their power to retain the mixed (white and black) basis of representation, and to deny to West Virginia its rights, as was affirmed. Dr. Ruffner's chief concern was for slave emancipation, which he knew could not be effected as long as East Virginia held the power. Still he did not take part in the controversy until specially invited to do so. When he went in he delivered an argument in favor of gradual emancipation, which by request was published in pamphlet and roused the State, and to some extent every State in the Union. In Virginia the weight of sentiment was heavily against emancipation—in fact, against the whole Lexington movement—and it came to naught. But the memory of the "Ruffner Pamphlet" still lives, and will not die. When Dr. Ruffner agreed to publish his speech he remarked privately that the publication of these sentiments would render it proper for him to resign the presidency of the college.

But more than all, his tired nature was crying aloud for rest. His physical frame was Herculean, and if he had lived an outdoor life he would have been as noted for physical strength as he was for intellectual.

In spite of all the troubles, the college enjoyed a fair degree of prosperity. A fifth professor was added, and in the heat of the controversies the number of students was 88, the highest number in the history of the institution up to that time except in 1842, when there was 97 on the roll. The numbers during Dr. Ruffner's whole administration were decidedly in advance of those in any preceding period. Handsome improvements had been made in the buildings and grounds. Peace had been restored in a great measure. So Dr. Ruffner thought that the time had come for him to carry out his purpose to withdraw. He left for Kanawha in May, 1848, and his resignation was sent to the Board of Trustees in June. Nothing disagreeable was said or done in connection with the event. Kind and appreciative resolutions were passed by the board, and he was requested to remain in the president's house as long as it suited his convenience.

His wifes' health, however, detained him in Lexington until after her death, which occurred in January, 1849. His four children

were all grown; three of them were gone or ready to go off to themselves. Only his eldest daughter, Julia, accompanied him to Kanawha. His two sons, William Henry and David Lewis, spent part of their lives in Kanawha, and the youngest, Annie, married and was then living in Philadelphia.

Two causes prevented Dr. Ruffner from settling down at once in Kanawha; one was his acceptance of an invitation to take part in the canvass then waging in Kentucky on the question of emancipation. He went to Louisville and wrote for the daily newspapers. His next sojourn was in Cincinnati, whither he went to consult some rare old tomes in the library of Lane Theological Seminary, in which he found some historical data which were useful to him in the preparation of his history of monkery. It was the summer of the cholera (1849), which he braved without fear.

The following winter he made his preparations for carrying out a scheme of retirement to the depths of the Kanawha Mountains. He had sold his salt and coal property in 1845 to Jacob Darneale, and invested some of the proceeds in mountain lands lying around the headwaters of Blue Creek, Campbell's Creek, Mill Creek and Indian Creek, an elevated region about seven miles from the river at Malden. Here in 1850, with his second wife and oldest daughter, he undertook to create a home where his fretted nerves might rest, and his eyes be regaled with the sight of flocks and waving corn. He found, alas! that 40 years of book study, preaching and teaching, was not a good preparation for opening and stocking a mountain farm, and that grubbing roots and building fence were something different from reading the bucolics of Virgil. Six or eight years dispelled his illusions, and he came back to Malden, where he took charge of the church which his father had established, and continued to preach there very usefully until his strength failed.

His history of monachism, entitled "The Fathers of the Desert," was published in two volumes, 12 mo., during his residence at Montovis (the name of his mountain home), but although a work of great learning, it was not on a subject that interested the public generally, and hence had but a limited circulation. Authorship was no part of his plan of life. In his earlier years at Lexington, he published two small volumes in defence of the Calvinistic theology, which, like all his arguments, were able. His preference was for

literary composition, which he published in magazines. His power of description, and the purity and elegance of his style, always made his articles acceptable. But during his college life he considered all his publications as literary recreations. His story, "Judith Bensaddi," went through several editions. Numerous sermons and addresses were published in pamphlet form. Curiously, he wrote learned works on Mathematics, Latin, Political Economy, Hebrew Grammar, etc., but did not publish any of them. They seemed to be intended only to assist him in prosecuting his own encyclopedic studies.

A learned professor said he was the only student in the German sense who had ever lived in Lexington. In a debate in Lexington some speaker quoted a distinguished man living in the place as authority, representing him as a very learned man. Captain David E. Moore said in reply, "I also will quote a distinguished man, who was not only the most learned man I ever knew, but if the next most learned man I ever knew were cut out of him, he would not be missed."

During the decade preceding the Civil War, Dr. Ruffner foresaw the approaching catastrophe, as is shown by his Union speech delivered during that period, and it depressed him grievously in both body and mind, and no doubt shortened his life. About the time that the Cotton States seceded his nervous system broke down utterly, and he was no longer able to preach. Gradually his strength failed without any attack of acute disease. His mind continued clear and that sweet peacefulness of spirit which had always characterized him never changed. His trust in God and his own hope in the future remained firm to the latest hour. He ceased to breathe December 17, 1861, aged 71 years and 11 months.

PERSONAL SKETCH.

In the short space which it will be proper to use in describing Dr. Ruffner as a man, I can not do better than to copy a description taken from a newspaper article written about 1871, which belonged to a series entitled "Old Churches," this article being on Timber Ridge Church (7 miles from Lexington), a church where Dr. Ruffner preached for 12 years during his professorship in Washington College. I am not certain as to the authorship of the article, but I

believe it to have been written by Rev. John Leyburn, D. D., who was born and educated in Lexington:

"Dr. Ruffner was educated at Washington College. There he became, first a tutor, then professor, and finally its able, efficient and distinguished president. He married Miss Sarah Lyle, daughter of Captain William Lyle, an elder of Timber Ridge Church. She was a lady of commanding appearance, gifted and cultivated in mind, and remarkable for her fine conversational power, her warm sympathies and cordial manners. She was just the "helpmeet" for such a man.

"We wish to write our recollections of him as a man and preacher. His appearance would have attracted the eye of any intelligent observer. He was six feet in height, erect, broad-shouldered, with a deep chest, a coal-black eye, and hair as dark. His face was always serious, calm and thoughtful. His manner was kind and gentle, though somewhat reserved. He was a friend through good and evil report. He did not fear the face of man. Had duty called him, he would have marched in a forlorn hope for the benefit of church or country with as much deliberation as he walked to his class-room. His modesty was proverbial. His charity was like the flowing streams of his mountain home, widening and deepening as they advance. Scandal stood abashed in his honest presence. In his stainless name, his domestic, social, college and pastoral life, he was an Israelite indeed, in whom there was no guile. None ever merited better the doctorates conferred on him, and none ever bore so modestly the many notices of his literature and scholarship. He was a diligent student through a long life, and his well trained mind was stored with the most varied and accurate learning in all branches of science, literature and theology.

When roused in debate, he had few superiors. He never used his cultivated powers, however, to wound an adversary, or for the mere vanity of triumph. After he had *reasoned* out the subject of discussion, he sat down. Only once did we ever know of his being thoroughly excited. At a meeting of Synod in Lexington many years ago, some points of a case of discipline were under discussion. A disparaging remark, in some form not now remembered, was made of the father of Dr. Ruffner. Immediately he was on his feet. With the shrug of the shoulder peculiar to him, his eye meanwhile

glowing with subdued excitement, and in a voice tremulous with emotion, he said, "*He who toucheth my father, toucheth the apple of my eye!*" A prominent spectator present could hardly restrain in open Synod from applauding the noble sentiment.

"In his preaching Dr. Ruffner was always able, clear and practical. His style was simple, but not common. His general habit was to preach with the aid of a few notes only.

"In the latter period of his life, his sermons were sometimes distinguished for their beauty and eloquence. In his sermonizing, he improved to the last. He was greatly esteemed at Timber Ridge, and very successful in his ministry. In 1822, during his pastorate, in connection with his professorship, a revival occurred by which *eighty* were added to the church. In 1831, by his own request, the Church parted with him, but with the most unaffected sorrow. The last sermon he ever preached to this people was on the celebration of their centennial, abbout fifteen years ago. It was published, and is still treasured by the Church as a precious memorial of one who served them in the sweetest of life's ministries.

"And now he who told them of the deeds of their fathers, of the grace of their father's God, and of the vanity of human things, sleeps quietly at his "forest home' on the banks of the Kanawha. And here, at the simple grave of this good man, the writer of these sketches, who received his blessing and prayer in the day of early consecration, would offer this poor expression of *his* gratitude and veneration."

Dr. Henry Ruffner lies burried in the private burying lot of the Ruffners, in rear of the mansion, which has been occupied by different members of the family for 96 years.

THE YATES AND AGLIONBY FAMILIES, OF JEFFERSON COUNTY, WEST VIRGINIA.

I have been asked to write a brief account of the Yates and Aglionby families, which have been connected with Jefferson county, then Berkeley county, since the year 1786.

It is in reality but one family, that of the Yateses, a branch of

it having in 1854 assumed the name of Aglionby, from which it is descended in the female line.

It may be well to begin with Charles Yates (1728-1809) the first of the name to acquire land in the Valley of Virginia. His father was the Rev. Francis Yates, rector of Gargrave in Yorkshire, but formerly of Whitehaven, in Cumberland, being the son of another Francis Yates, incumbent of St. Nicholas, in that town, 1694-1720.

I was able some years ago to trace the descent of the Yates family a generation further back, viz., to William Yates, who was living at Shackerley, in the parish of Donnington, Shropshire, in 1656. He was the great grandfather of Charles Yates.

It will be convenient to set down here some information concerning the Yates family in its earlier period, which I have been enabled to collect from various sources.

Boschobel is in the parish of Donnington, Shropshire, and in the account of the escape of King Charles II. from the battlefield of Worchester, the Yateses are mentioned along with the Penderels, their relatives, as having conveyed the King to a place of safety after his adventure in the Oak.

William Yates, living there about that time, had a number of sons. Two of these, Robert and Bartholomew, emigrated to Virginia, where they became professors in the new college of William and Mary at Williamsburg, the Rev. Bartholomew Yates being subsequently its president. These distinguished men were also rectors of parishes, and Bishop Meade gives an account of them in his book on "Old Churches and Families in Virginia," where they have left numerous descendants in the female line.

Francis Yates, the son of William, b. 1666, and educated at Christ's College, Cambridge, was ordained by Bishop Frampton at Gloucester 1686. In 1694 he was chosen minister of St. Nicholas, Whitehaven, and is said to have been nearly related by marriage to the Saintly Bishop Wilson, of Soder and Man, who ordained his son Francis Yates (the 2nd) September 25, 1720.

An anecdote of the Rev. Francis Yates, of Whitehaven, may be given here. He was six feet five inches high: and it is recorded that once, at an assize trial, he was to give evidence in favor of a prisoner against whom the judge was violently prejudiced, and endeavored to give the business an unfavorable result. Upon Mr.

Yateses' entrance, My Lord exclaimed, "And now, Caiaphas, what have you to remark?" "I have only to remark, My Lord, that when Caiaphas was high priest, Pontias Pilate was judge."

His son, the Rev. Francis Yates, the father of Charles, who went to Virginia, was educated at Queens College, Oxford, and married in 1725 Ansie Orfeur, who belonged to one of the oldest families in Cumberland. The Orfeurs had been settled at High Close for fourteen generations, and through them the Yateses became connected with the Howards, the Lamphephs, the Dykees, the Lowthers, the LeFlemmings and other families of worship and renown in Cumberland and Westmoreland. The late Miss A. E. Terrill, in her delightful "Memorials of a Family in England and Virginia" (printed for private circulation in 1887) has preserved a romantic account of the marriage between William Orfeur, of High Close, and Elizabeth Howard, the granddaughter of Belted Will, of the Border, about the year 1654. A son of theirs, General John Orfeur, fought under Marlborough at Blenheim, as a Major of Dragoons.

The Rev. Francis Yates, rector of Gargrave, and Anne Orfeur, his wife, left three sons and one daughter, viz., Charles, Lowther, Jane and John Orfeur. Charles will be spoken of later on. Lowther was educated at Sedbergh and St. Catherine Hall, Cambridge, of which he became a Fellow and finally Master. He was Vice-Chancellor of the University and Canon of Norwich Cathedral at his death in 1798.

Jane married John Mathews, a retired lieutenant of the Royal Navy.

John Orfeur, the youngest son of the Rev. Francis Yates, of Gargrave, married Mary, daughter of Henry Aglionby, of Nunnery, and Anne, his wife, daughter of Sir Christopher Musgrave Bart, of Edenhall.

We now return to Charles Yates the eldest surviving son of the Rev. Francis Yates and Anne Orfeur, his wife, who emigrated to Virginia and settled at Fredericksburg in 1752, where he became a member of the business firm of Payne, Moore & Co. After the Revoluton he was associated in business with William Lovell, Esq. Miss Terrill has given selections from the correspondence of Charles Yates, with his family in England and also with some of his friends, who were officers in the American Army at Princeton and else-

where. In 1786 he describes to his brother, John Orfeur Yates, the acquisition of a tract of land "forty miles from Alexandria and four miles from the Potomac." For many years he spent his summers, a pleasant change from the tidewater region of Virginia, at Walnut Grove, where he had built a substantial house.

After a life of sixty-one years in Virginia, he died January 11, 1809, greatly esteemed amongst persons of all classes for his probity, his kindness and charity. He was buried in the Masonic burial ground at Fredericksburg. He never married, and, wishing for the society of his kindred, he proposed that one of his nephews should be sent out to him. This wish was gratified by the arrival at Fredericksburg in September, 1792, of John Yates, the second son of his brother, John Orfeur Yates.

As John Yates now comes upon the scene, it will be convenient to give here some account of the Aglionbys, for his mother was the youngest daughter of Henry Aglionby, of Nunnery, and Anne Musgrave, his wife.

The family traces its origin to Walter d'Aguilon, a soldier of William the Conqueror, to whom land was assigned in Cumberland, including the manor of Aglionby, a village near Carlisle and Drawdykes Castle, between that city and the border. The family found it safest to live in Carlisle, where it wielded much influence, no less than eleven of its members having been returned to Parliament for the city between the 42d year of Edward III. and the 8th of George I. A William Aglionby followed King Richard I. on his crusade to the Holy Land.

The Aglionbys were connected by marriage with many other ancient families in the country—the Blennerhassets, the Skeltons, the Saltelds, the Gilpins, the Patricksons, the Richmonds, the Fletchers, the Lawsons and the Musgraves.

A branch of the family settled in Warwickshire, one of whom, Edward Aglionby, was M. P. for Warwick and held important posts under Henry VIII. As Recorder of Warwick, he welcomed Queen Elizabeth on her visit to Kenilworth and is mentioned by Sir Walter Scott in his novel.

In the next generation a noted member of the family was Dr. John Aglionby, Fellow of Queen's College, Oxford, and Principal of St. Edmond Hall, chaplain to Queen Elizabeth and King James I.,

and one of the translators of the Bible. His son George Aglionby was educated at Westminster School and Christ Church, Oxford, where he was buried. He was tutor to the son of George Villiers, Duke of Buckingham, and a friend of the Philosopher Hobbs. He became Dean of Canterbury in 1643.

The Aglionbys were loyalists during the Civil Wars. John Aglionby, of Carlisle, was taken prisoner by the Parliamentary forces after a vigorous defence of the city and sentenced to death, but made his escape the night before he was to have been executed.

The Neale line of the family became extinct by the death of Christopher Aglionby at Nunnery in 1786, where his great-great-grandfather, John Aglionby, had settled in 1696. He left four sisters, the youngest of whom, Mary, married John Orfeur Yates, of Skirwith Abbey. Their son John Yates, a boy of 14, joined his uncle, Charles Yates, at Fredericksburg. He was educated at Princeton and studied law at William and Mary College. In 1803 he married Julia, daughter of his uncle's friend and partner, William Lovell. They lived for several years at Fox Neck, near Germanna, then in Culpeper county, at the junction of the Rapidan and the Rappahannock. At the desire of his uncle he removed to Walnut Grove, then in Berkeley county. There he lived for nearly forty-four years, rearing a large family and winning for himself the esteem and veneration of his friends and fellow citizens. He had much to do with the establishment of the free school system in the county.

The Virginia Free Press spoke of him at his death as being universally lamented.

During nearly sixty years he had kept in touch with his English relations, whose letters were carefully preserved, and notably those of his mother, Mary Yates, up to her death in 1816. She was a woman of strong sense and fine intellectual powers. These letters he commended to his children, and a few years ago they were collected and printed, together with other letters by his granddaughter, the late Miss A. E. Terrill. They give a continuous family chronicle extending over some seventy years. They are aptly described by the words of a poet, who speaks of "Those fallen leaves which keep their green, the noble letters of the dead."

John Yates had an unquenchable desire to revisit his native coun-

try, and, although enfeebled by age and disease, he sailed from Philadelphia in May, 1851. He was accompanied by his grandson, John Yates Beall, a youth of sixteen. They reached Liverpool after a voyage which greatly exhausted the aged traveller and pushed on at once to Nurney, near Penrith, where he was lovingly welcomed by the widow of his brother, Major Francis Aglionby (formerly Yates) and his own cousin. He lingered for three weeks and passed away in peace on July 6. He was laid to rest beside others of his kindred beneath the chancel of Ainstable Church. His widow, Julia Yates, survived until the year 1866, when she fell asleep in the presence of many children and grandchildren, leaving behind her a memory of rare worth and loveliness.

It remains for me to give a very brief sketch of the children of John and Julia Yates, whose careers and characters would in not a few cases, afford material for a series of articles.

Their sons were Charles, William, Francis and John Orfeur; their daughters, Janet, Mary, Anne, Elizabeth and Julia.

The sons: 1. Charles, born at Fox Neck 1807, educated at Princeton and inherited the portion of his brother's estate known as Mt. Pleasant. He married in 1844, Fanny, daughter of old James W. Walker, of Madison County, Va., by whom he had a large family. In 1854 a portion of the Nunnery property in England came to him by the will of his great aunt, Mrs. Bamber, nee Aglionby, in accordance with whose will he took the name of Aglionby. He died January 30, 1891; his widow still survives, the last of her generation.

2. William Yates, born 1809 at Walnut Grove, studied medicine and practiced in Charles Town. He married Anna S. Daugherty and died January 30, 1840.

3. Francis, born in Walnut Grove 1811, married in 1840 Anne Burwell, daughter of Bacon Burwell, of Jefferson county, by whom he had a large family. In 1863 he married a second time Sydney Virginia Rocker, of Charles Town, who had one daughter and survived him several years. He died January 1, 1892. He served as a member of the Virginia Legislature and was a colonel of militia. His eldest son, John Orfeur Yates, fought in Co. B., Twelfth Virginia Cavalry, during the war of secession, and died in 1899.

4. John Orfeur Yates, born at Walnut Grove, 1813, graduated

in law at the University of Virginia and practiced for several years in Charles Town. A career brilliant in promise was cut short by death at Pensacola, in Florida, where he had gone for his health, March 28, 1839.

The daughters of John Yates and Julia Lovell were as follows:

1. Janet, born at Fox Neck 1804, married 1826 George Brook Beall, of Jefferson county, and had a large family of sons and daughters. They lived near the old homestead at Walnut Grove; he died August, 1854, and she February, 1875. Their second son John Yates Beall, who accompanied his grandfather to England in 1854, entered the Confederate service and became a captain in the navy. He died for his country at New York in February, 1865. A memoir of him was published in 1866 by Judge D. B. Lucas.

2. Mary, born at Fox Neck 1805, married in 1826 Humphrey Keyes, of Charles Town and died in 1827.

3. Anne, born at Walnut Grove July, 1815, married 1847 the Rev. William Thomas Leavell, of Charles City county, Virginia, and died in Madison county 1858. They had a family of sons and daughters. The Rev. W. T. Leavell closed a long ministerial life at Hedgesville, Berkeley county, West Virginia, in August, 1899.

4. Elizabeth, born at Walnut Grove 1817, died unmarried in October, 1844.

5. Julia, born at Walnut Grove July, 1819, married William Lovell Terrill 1839, had three children. Her only son John Uriel, served in the Confederate Army, first in the Second Virginia Infantry, Stonewall Brigade, and afterwards in Co. B., Twelfth Virginia Cavalry. He died in November, 1878.

Anne Elizabeth Terrill, the eldest child of Julia and William Lovell Terrill, compiled the volume of Family Memorials, to which the writer of this article is so greatly indebted. She died in February.

It has only been possible to record with austere brevity the names, marriages and deaths of the children of John and Julia Yates. It would have been beyond the scope of this article to recount the things concerning so many of them which were "true, honest, just, pure, lovely and of good report." an omission which those in whose hearts their memories are still green will be able to supply for themselves.

This account of a family which has abounded during so many centuries in those who did their duty toward God and their fellow men acceptably and honorably, has its lessons for all, but more particularly for its living members. It is for these to strive that they may transmit to posterity the traditions of so goodly a lienage, with the added lustre which only pure, upright, strenuous, unselfish lives can give to them, and so to glorify Him who is "the God of the families of the earth."

F. K. AGLIONBY.

London, 1902.

JACOB WARWICK.

One of the imperatively sacred duties resting on the living, is to preserve memorials of worthy people, though long since deceased. The lessons illustrated by such memorials may stimulate and encourage persevering endeavors to cherish similar aims in our own lives,

> "For as the light
> Not only serves to show but render us
> Mutually profitable; so our lives,
> In acts examplars, not only win
> Ourselves good names, but do to others give
> Matter for virtuous deeds by which we live."

The aim of this article is to perform such a service with reference to Jacob Warwick, a noted pioneer of Pocahontas county, and Indian scout, on the frontier of the great Virginia Valley, previously and subsequently to the Revolution.

The writer is deeply indebted to John Warwick, Esq., late of Marlington; Judge James W. Warwick, late of the Warm Springs, Va., and Mrs. Elizabeth McLaughlin, of Huntersville, for the information from which this historical article is compiled. All these persons have recently passed away at advanced ages, and not far apart.

The tradition relied on by the compiler is to the effect that the father of Jacob Warwick came to Augusta county from Williams-

burg, Va., during colonial times between 1740-50. He was a lieutenant in the service of the British Crown and was employed in locating and surveying land grants in Augusta county, which county comprised territory of which States have been since formed.

Lieutenant Warwick located and occupied the Dunmore property, three miles east of Forrest Station, on the Greenbrier railroad, now occupied by the family of the late Colonel Pritchard.

Lieutenant Warwick married Miss Elizabeth Dunlap, near Middlebrook, Va. He seems to have been one of the English gentry whose families settled in Virginia and whose traits of character are so graphically portrayed in Thackeray's "Virginians."

After operating extensively in lands, and securing the Dunmore property in his own name, Lieutenant Warwick left home for a visit to England. He never returned and nothing authentic ever learned as to what became of him. He was finally given up for dead.

In the meanwhile, Mrs. Warwick occupied the Dunmore property, had it secured by deed to her son Jacob, the subject of this sketch, and soon afterwards married Robert Sitlington near old Milboro, Va., in the bounds of Windy Cove Church. To this church Mrs. Sitlington left a bequest of one thousand dollars, the annual interest of which was to be a part of the pastor's salary.

It may be stated here, too, that when it was decided that Lieutenant Warwick was dead, the grandfather of the late David Bell, of Fishersville, Va., was appointed guardian of his son. Jacob, Warwick, William and James Bell, prominent citizens of Augusta county in their day, were the sons of Jacob Warwick's guardian, and cotemporaries of young Warwick, their father's ward.

James Bell's sons were William A. Bell and David Bell, who are well remembered by so many yet living near Staunton, Va., for all the traits that constitute the noblest type of Virginia citizenship—pious, intelligent tillers of the ground. Jacob Warwick married Mary Vance, daughter of Colonel John Vance, who lived at Mountain Grove, on Back Creek, Bath county, Va. It was early in the seventies he married and settled at Dunmore. His children were all born there. He industriously and successfully busied himself in accumulating lands, managing immense herds of cattle and droves of horses.

In the meanwhile the reports from Kentucky were so enticing that Mr. Warwick decided to settle there, and actually set out for the purpose of locating and securing a Kentucky home.

The persons in the advance of the prospecting party, with which he was going, were ambusheaded by Indians near Sewell Mountain, and when Mr. Warwick and the rest of the party came up and saw their slain friends all returned home.

Mrs. Warwick thereupon became settled in her resolution never to leave her Virginia home, and so her husband was induced to exchange the Kentucky possessions with one Alexander Dunlap for a section of the Clover Lick lands.

In a few words let it be stated that Jacob Warwick was one of the first persons to make extensive improvements in what are now Pocahontas and Bath counties, in the two Virginias. It has been stated previously that he began business for himself at Dunmore. Then he purchased Clover Lick, where he resided for a time; then moved to his immense possessions on Jackson's river, and afterwards returned to Clover Lick. In addition to the estates mentioned, he acquired some others of similar value. He endowed his six daughters and one son with ample legacies, and besides bequeathed a competency to ten or fifteen grandchildren.

Mr. Warwick was a very alert, sagacious scout and a successful Indian fighter, had a series of conflicts with Indians, narrowly escaping with his life on several occasions. Yet he was never sure of killing but one Indian. Parties now living remember seeing a tree on the lands of John R. Warwick near Green Bank, where Jacob Warwick slew that Indian in single combat. It always grieved him that he had apparently sent one soul into eternity under such sad circumstances.

Owing to his accurate acquaintance with the mountain ranges, far and near, his services were in frequent demand by land agents and governmental surveyors. He and others went to Randolph county as an escort for a land commissioner in the service of the colony. It was during the period when Buckalongaha, or Killbuck, scouted the mountains with bands of Shawnees and Mingoes. Colonel John Stuart, the renowned pioneer of Greenbrier, was of the opinion that of all the Indians the Shawnees were the most bloody

and terrible, holding all other men—Indians as well as whites—in contempt as warriors in comparison with themselves.

At the time Mr. Warwick went over to Tygart's Valley with the commission the season had been inclement, and it was believed the Indians would not be abroad. Indeed such was the sense of security, the men did not think it worth while to arm themselves on leaving for their work. While in the lower valley, however, near what is now Huttonsville, it was reported by one Thomas Lecky, a person of somewhat questionable veracity, that he had seen fresh Indian signs. As Mr. Warwick and his party were unarmed, six friends armed themselves and went with them as far as the place where Lecky had seen the trail. Upon approaching near the locality, Andrew Sitlington's horse shied and whirled around. Thereupon his rider saw Indians, but for a moment could not speak. This attracted Mr. Warwick's attention, and, looking in the same direction, he saw the Shawnees creeping along in stooping posture, to reach a suitable place to cut them off. He gave the alarm, "Indians! Indians!" Finding themselves discovered, the warriors fired hastily, wounding one of the party and Mr. Warwick's horse. The horse sank to the ground as if shot dead, but as Mr. Warwick was in the act of throwing off his cloak for flight, the horse rose and darted off at the top of his speed, and carried his rider safely home to Dunmore before night. Those that were mounted all escaped—Jacob Warwick, James McClain, Thomas Cartmill and Andrew Sitlington.

Of those afoot, John Crouch, John Hulder and Thomas Leckey escaped, and John McClain, James Ralston and John Nelson were slain. The attack was made near the mouth of Windy Run, close to what is now the village of Valley Head.

One man was killed running across the bottom, three of the men escaped by climbing the bank where they were first attacked, two others in looking for an easier place to get up the bank were overtaken, killed and scalped.

Not very far from this place is the Laurel Thicket, whence Colonel Washington was picked off by Union scouts in 1861.

Upon a subsequent occasion Mr. Warwick went over into Tygart's Valley from Clover Lick. It was night when he returned, and upon nearing the cabins at the Lick, located a few rods east of the front

of the Clover Lick Chapel, the first Episcopal house of worship yet erected in Pocahontas county, the horse showed signs of fear of something in the pathway, which Mr. Warwick at once discovered to be fresh husks of roasting ears. The presence of Indians was at once surmised, and upon moving cautiously a little farther, it was found the row of Cabins had been burned and the premises ransacked. The place had been left in the care of a colored man named Sam and Greenbrier Ben, a boy aged about 10 years. Sam escaped to the woods and made for Dunmore, Ben hid in a hemp patch so near the cabin that while it was burning he could hardly keep still, his buckskin breeches were so hot. From his retreat Ben saw the Indians pick the chickens, leaving their tails and top-knots and laughing at their grotesque appearance. Their next piece of sport was to run a wagon into the fire, after the dwelling had become a smouldering heap of coals. Mr. Warwick had this wagon brought from Bath county, by Mountain Grove, following Little Back Creek to about three miles above where the Huntersville road now crosses that stream going east, thence across the Allegheny range by way of Knapp's Spur, along by Harper's Mill, thence across to Thorny Creek, through the Lightner place, past Bethel Church, to the Saunders place, on Thorny Creek, thence up the ridge to the summit and then along down to the Knapp place, on the Greenbrier river, thence up to Clover Lick by the bed of the stream. So far as known, this was the first wheeled vehicle that ever crossed the Alleghanies into this region.

The most memorable event of Mr. Warwick's history was his being in the expedition to Point Pleasant under General Andrew Lewis. It was a nineteen days' march from Lewisburg to Point Pleasant, one hundred and sixty miles. This conflict with the Indians was the most decisive that had hitherto occurred and came off Monday, October 10, 1774.

Our literary President Roosevelt expresses the opinion in some of his historical researches that had this battle been lost to the Virginians, the limits of the United States had there been a successful revolutionary war, would have been restricted to the "narrow neck of land" between the Alleghanies and the Atlantic coast.

Far be it from me to write anything peevishly or captiously about the accepted history of that epochal struggle, so astonishing in its

consequences upon human affairs and apparently never more so than right now in this strenuous living present. For if I had my way, every one connected with the history of that battle would be elevated many points higher from where they have been standing hitherto for more than a hundred years, so as to make room for some others to have a little margin for a standing place in the grateful, intelligent memories of their countrymen.

All this being so, then permit the writer of this sketch to say that in his opinion the recorded and usually accepted history of this battle does not accord what is due to the memory of a very deserving person. It is conceded by all, so far as the writer knows, if any records that up to the moment when there occurred a lull in the battle, the advantage was with the Indians. The question arises why should a warrior, skillful as Cornstalk, call a halt in the full tide of success and mysteriously cease firing and pressing upon a receding foe, with victory just in his grasp.

Had it not been for this no troops could have been safely detached for a flank movement. Flank movements are only a good policy for those prepared to press the enemy or hold the centre in check, and not for a retreating party. When Cornstalk ceased to press, the victory was decided in favor of the Virginians, and lost to him. Had the battle been lost to our people and the army sacrificed unspeakable disasters would have befallen all settlements west of the Blue Ridge Mountains; the Revolution would have been deferred, possibly, for all time, and the whole history of America far different from what has been. How is that lull in the battle to be accounted for which resulted in victory for the Virginians, and all that the victory implied?

Colonel Kerchival, who claims to have derived his information from Joseph Mayse and Andrew Reed, of Bath county, Va., states as on their authority, "that about *two o'clock* in the afternoon Colonel Christian arrived on the field with about five hundred men the *battle was still raging*. The reinforcement decided the issue almost immediately. The Indians fell back about two miles, but such was their persevering spirit, though fairly beaten, the contest was not closed until the setting of the sun, when they relinquished the field."

Dr. Foote says, in his sketch of the battle, which is one of the

most minute and extended of all in the reach of this writer, "that Colonel Christian entered the camp about *midnight*, and found all in readiness for a renewed attack." (Second series, p. 165).

There were persons recently living in Bath county, Va., and the writer had a long interview with one of them, Judge Warwick, September, 1873, almost in speaking distance of the residence where Joseph Mayse lived and died.

This may be said about Joseph Mayse's credibility as a witness: He served as magistrate between forty-five and fifty years, and was twice high sheriff. His memory was considered as reliable as an "official record." His health was such he was never known to take a dose of medicine, and never knew what whiskey and coffee taste like. He died "serene and calm" in April, 1840, in the 89th year of his age.

According to Judge Warwick's statement, amply corroborated by the recollections of the late William McClintic, Esq., a person possessing a phenomenally accurate memory, Mr. Mayse often repeated the fact that Jacob Warwick was detailed with a number of others, perhaps fifty or sixty all told, to bring in a supply of meat that rations might be prepared for a forced march to the Indian towns, as ordered by Governor Dunmore.

These persons crossed the Kanawha about daybreak, and while at work in the hunting grounds and slaughter pens, they heard the firing beyond the limits of the camp, and so far up the Ohio they surmised it to be a salute to Governor Dunmore, whose arrival was expected at any moment by the soldiers generally. But the firing continuing too long for this, it was then conjectured the troops were getting their arms in order for the contemplated march over the Ohio. Finally they suspected it might be a battle. Mr. Warwick was one of the first to ascertain this to be so, and at once rallied the butchers and hunters in order to return to camp and join the battle. This was noticed by the enemy, and Chief Cornstalk was of the opinion that Colonel Christian was at hand. He paused in the reach of victory, and took measures to withdraw from the conflict, unobserved by our almost exhausted troops. For two hours the Indians had been falling back, and when the flank movement was made, what fighting that occurred afterwards was with the rear guard of Cornstalk's retreating army of demoralized braves.

If all this be true, and, considering the source of information, the writer sees no reason to question its authenticity in the main, it illustrates how important results are sometimes made to depend in the providence of God, upon fidelity to duty on the part of the very obscure, and brings in evidence the leading of God's invisible, hidden hand in human affairs. The writer would emphatically disclaim writing a word in a complaining spirit, yet one feels like saying, if this be true, what a comment it furnishes on the justice meted out by the historic muse. The reputed and justly renowned hero of Point Pleasant appears in bronze, an honored member of the group, wherein stand Henry, Jefferson and Marshall, while the almost nameless man, whose hand was used in turning at a critical moment the fortunes of that most eventful day, sleeps in his obscure grave on the west bank of Jackson's river, six miles from the Warm Springs, Va. Were it the grave of Campbell's "Last Man" it could not be in a much less frequented place.

In person Jacob Warwick was tall, stoop-shouldered, exceedingly agile and muscular. His grandson, the late Jacob See, of Tucker county, W. Va., is said to have resembled him more than anyone else in personal feature and form.

Mr. Warwick was jovial in his disposition and passionately fond of innocent merriment. He delighted much in the society of young people, and even children. His pleasant words and kindly deeds to young people were vividly and affectionately remembered by all who ever knew him. After the decease of his wife, who died and was buried at Clover Lick, he went to the home of his eldest daughter, Mrs. Major Charles Cameron, on Jackson river near the Warm Springs, Va., and passed the remainder of his days.

He died at the breakfast table. When apoplexy came upon him he was merrily twitting Miss Phebe Woods about her beau, young Mr. Beale. This occurred January, 1826, when he was nearing his 83d year.

His remains were borne about a mile up the west bank of Jackson river from the residence of Major Charles Cameron, and in a plot reserved for family burials he was laid in his lowly and lonely grave.

When the writer visited this grave many years ago, the place seemed to be in danger of forgetfulness. A locust tree overshadowed

and marked the place of his burial. Since then the plot has been nicely enclosed and the grave marked by a neatly sculptured marble. In that sequestered, but charming, valley retreat, the strong, jovial, brave and busy man has found repose,

While unheeded o'er his "silent tent,"
The storms of life may beat.

W. T. PRICE.

Marlinton, W. Va.

A BIT OF HISTORY.

By WM. H. EDWARDS.

I went from New York to Richmond on Monday, April 8th, 1861, at the request of the Hon. Allen T. Caperton, who was there as a member of the Legislature. Soon after assembling, on January 14th, a convention of the people had been called, which accordingly met in February (13th), and was then in session. The Legislature had early passed resolutions adverse to the secession of Virginia to the Confederacy, and no doubt this represented the feeling of the State at that time. ——— ——— and Isaac N. Smith represented the county of Kanawha. I think there was a third member, but, if so, I forgot his name. In the convention, the Hon. George W. Summers and Dr. Spicer Patrick were members from Kanawha. It was a gathering of the ablest men of the State. Ex-President Tyler was one of them, and so was ex-Governor Wise. From one of the lower counties came Jeremiah Morton, whom I had known as a stockholder in one of the cannel coal-oil companies of Paint Creek, in Kanawha county, and also as one of the recently organized White Sulphur Springs Company.

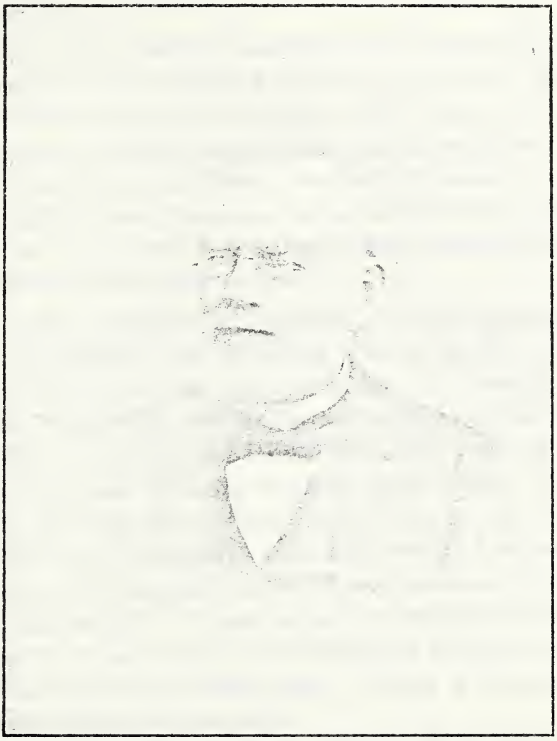
When I left New York public opinion throughout the North was unsettled. The people were astonished at the violent action of the most Southern States, and could not guess whither the currents were carrying the country. Many of the papers were outspoken against any attempt at coercion by the government, none of them more so than the influential New York Tribune, edited by Horace Greeley. He had gone so far as to utter the memorable words: "Erring sis-

ters, go in peace." How many of the tens of thousands who read and swore by that paper thought as Greeley thought there was as yet no means of knowing. The Herald, owned and run by the Scotchman, James Gordon Bennett, was clamoring for the right of a State to secede. Fernando Wood, the Mayor, openly advocated the secession of New York city, and would have it join the Confederacy. It was supposed that the Democratic party, as a whole, would refuse to follow President Lincoln if he should attempt coercion. The Governor, Horatio Seymour, at a mass meeting held in the city on January 31st, had vigorously opposed coercion of any sort, and he was influential with the Democracy. Therefore the North held itself in suspense, and most of the friends of the Union had faith that the black clouds would blow away.

On the day I left there was no symptom of present disturbance, at any rate. So when I reached Washington, I saw nothing to indicate a coming storm. Passing through Alexandria, I noticed a pole from which flew a new style of flag, and someone remarked that this was the emblem of the Confederacy, but there was no talk about it. People were keeping their opinions to themselves. That was all to Richmond. I put up at Ballard's Exchange Hotel, where I found Mr. Caperton and several friends from the Western counties. Judge Summers was one of these. He, in connection with John Tyler, William C. Rives and others, had represented Virginia in a peace deputation that met in Washington late in February or early in March, but which had been unable to obtain assurances or promises from the incoming administration. The Judge was a Union man then and always, and he expressed to me his disquiet at the situation. Indeed he was very much dispirited. He spoke of desperate efforts that were being made to take Virginia over to the Confederacy, and what the result would be he could not conjecture. Dr. Patrick felt in the same way, as did others whom I knew. All agreed that the sooner this convention separated the better for Virginia. I was surprised at this feeling, as from what I had heard at home I had not believed that Virginia could be made the cat's paw of the cotton States.

On successive days I attended the meetings of the convention, and listened to no end of speeches, some few sensible, deprecating excitement and hasty action, but the most were fiery and breathed of

war and blood. The Union men had already had their say, and had no wish now to protract the session, and the talking was mostly left to the other side. The extremists, on the other hand, were desirous of nothing so much as delay. If they could prolong the session a few weeks only, something might turn up to "fire the Southern heart," and force the State out. John Tyler was ardent for seces-



COL. W. H. EDWARDS.

sion, and talked interminably. So did Wise and Morton, and all three made long speeches on nothing. It seemed to me that these men were acting on a preconcerted plan.

All this time Beauregard was planting his batteries against Sumter, and the signal to open fire was daily looked for. Frequent bulletins were posted about the hotels showing progress. This kept the excitement at fever-heat. But, while I saw evidence of satisfaction

with the assault on the fort, I heard citizens at the bulletin boards curse the folly of the Carolinians. The papers from the South, and some not so far from Richmond, added fuel, with their blood-curdling predictions of what was going to happen when the Louisiana Tigers and similar ferocious organizations let themselves loose on the cowardly scum of the North. A New Orleans paper just then was bragging that one buck from the South would chaw up three Yankees any day.

One morning Mr. Gooch, a member of one of the lower counties, who was as fond of the sound of his own voice as was Wise himself, announced that he had just read that 5,000 Tigers had set out for Washington, and shouted that he wished them god-speed and vowed he would join them when they reached Richmond. After this speaker subsided a member arose and spoke feelingly of his love for the Union and his reverance for the old flag, lamenting the indignities to which both were now subjected.

I was greatly impressed by the loyalty of his language, and by the feeling manifested, and on asking who the speaker was was told that it was Lieutenant or Captain Early, of Franklin county, a graduate of West Point, who had served with credit in Florida and Mexico. This tender-hearted Union man, who wept as he apostrophised the flag, was the same General Jubal Early, of Bull Run, Gettysburg, and the Shenandoah Valley, one of the bitterest enemies the Union had during the war, and who died unreconciled.

One of the most outspoken of the Union men was John S. Carlile, from Harrison county. I had made his acquaintance some years previous in the Western part of the State—a bright, able man. He fought Wise and Morton strenuously. Being a Democrat, he was very obnoxious to the secessionists.

Fort Sumter capitulated April 13th, to the delight of the majority of that convention. All the week Richmond had been filling up with long-haired, wild-eyed strangers, many of them said to be Knights of the Golden Circle, brought in for the purpose of influencing the convention and public opinion.

On Sunday I took a walk to the suburbs with Mr. Caperton, and he expressed himself as being greatly disturbed at the situation. He said that messengers were coming in from his county and from Greenbrier and the adjoining counties, and the country was report-

ed as wild for secession. He did not believe that the contagion could be resisted. He thought that if Virginia cast her lot with the Southern States, it would make for peace. The government would not dare to attack the Confederacy, with the addition of Virginia, and in time, through the good officers of his State, the two sections would be brought together again. I suggested that he use his great influence in his district, and that Mr. Price should do the same, and resist this ruinous action of the convention before the people, as Judge Summers and Colonel Ben. Smith and Lewis Ruffner would do in Kanawha; and I assured him that it was a great mistake to assume that the North would not fight for the Union.

A committee, or rather an embassy, had recently been sent to Washington to urge non-action. One of its members was the Honorable Ballard Preston, a particular friends of Mr. Caperton, and who had great influence with him. They returned while I was in the city, having failed to get the least concession. The depression of the Union men was deep and apparent. It seemed to them that every effort for peace was pre-destined to be a failure. They had hoped much from this embassy. Things wer going to suit the other side, however. The ambassadors were to report to the public on Monday afternoon, at one of the churches, and I went thither, but was turned back at the door, as a stranger.

That day, 15th April, President Lincoln issued the call for 75,000 troops, of which Virginia was expected to furnish her quota. This added fresh fuel to the sufficiently hot fire. I went with a gentleman that evening to the Powhatan House, the headquarters of the extremists, to see what was going on. We found Mr. Morton enthroned in the lobby, haranguing, and evidently feeling extra good. Presently he addressed me personally: "Sir, if all my coal in Kanawha were diamonds, and the White Sulphur ran pearls, I would give the whole to have Virginia go out. Why, sir, in twenty years grass would be growing in the streets of New York, and Norfolk would be the bigger city." That was at the time a common hallucination, that war would ruin the North and build up the South, for "Cotton was King." In the summer of 1862, the story goes that General Early was leading his weary troops through Morton's plantation, when he encountered his fellow member of the convention: "Well, Uncle Jerry, what do you think now of the

compromises of the Constitution?'' that having been a pet expression of his. The year after the war, I met Mr. Morton in Kanawha, and he remarked that he was broken "as fine as powder." I was sorry, for he was really a fine old gentlemtn, who was born for a better fate.

I had gone to bed that night when Mr. Caperton came to my room and advised me to leave town in the morning, else there was no telling when I might be able to get away. He said that some fellows had just been through the house carrying a rope, in search of Carlile. That gentleman probably had notice, for he had already left. He walked a few miles up the Fredericksburg road and boarded the train in the morning.

On Monday, April 17th, the convention passed the ordinance of secession, big with disaster to Virginia. It was to be submitted to the voters a month later, but the managers proceeded as if the State were already out, as in fact it was.

I left Richmond early, and heard afterwards that I had taken the last train that left for the North for many a day. When I reached Washington I found quite another city from that I had passed through a week before. Flags were out everywhere, soldiers were everywhere, and the lobby at Willard's was thronged with people eager to hear the latest news. In the morning, on taking the train for Philadelphia, I found Augustus Schell, collector of the port of New York under Buchanan, and who was, or had been, Sachem of Tammany. From him I learned of the vast change which that shot at Sumter had brought about through the whole North. A fine-looking young officer sat in the seat next in front, and Mr. Schell spoke of him as Colonel Ellsworth, from Chicago, who had been much talked of. During the preceding year, in anticipation of the coming troubles, he had organized and drilled a band of young athletes. Ellsworth was the first man killed in McClellan's advance at Alexandria.

After we had passed through Maryland the Stars and Stripes began to show. Philadelphia was gay with them. At that day it was necessary to cross the city in omnibuses, and this gave opportunity to see the display. So it was to Trenton, and through New Jersey. At Trenton the Governor of New Jersey got in, returning to his home in Newark. He, with his staff, had been engaged at the Capi-

tal on matters connected with the draft. A man came in and sat by me, and soon opened on the all-absorbing topic. He said he would not have believed a week ago that he would ever feel as he did to-day. That he was a Democrat, in Southern business, and had money due him from all over the South; and that he considered the money gone. "Damn them," said he: "I don't care now if I never see a cent of it. We'll fight it out."

New York, which had outwardly been quiet, now threw out a flag on every house and place of business. The Herald at first refused to show its loyalty in that way, and was very soon visited by a gathering of citizens who meant business unless a flag was run up in short order. Bennett found a flag mighty quick. The war feeling became intensified as the days passed, and as soldiers from the interior and the upper States, began to arrive, on their way to Washington. There was trouble at Baltimore and Washington was in danger of finding itself isolated. Troops were hurried forward, and even the Seventh Regiment, the crack regiment of the State, and whose special duty it is to keep order in New York city, was sent on.

The larger part of the Democratic party, when it came to the cross-roads, went with the administration, and so upset many calculations both at the North and South. War Democrats, these allies were called, and they fought for and upheld the government to the end of the war.

Patriotic meetings were held in the city squares by day and by night. Buchanan had left the Treasury empty, and there was neither coin, nor credit to the Government. Citizens came to the rescue and contributed according to their means to help the Treasury tide over the difficulty, A. T. Stewart heading the list with fifty thousand dollars. In these days of multi-millionaires, who can draw their checks for millions, such a subscription from the greatest merchant of New York, seems trivial, but that was the day of small things in all but the love of country. The rivulets from all over the North made a sizeable stream, and helped at Washington amazingly. The banks had suspended payment, and silver had passed out of sight. To relieve the consequent pressure, diminutive bills called "shin-plasters" were issued by banks, corporations, firms and individuals, and passed every where without question. Even postage stamps for a while passed as currency. Congress was

in session presently, and it was not long before ways and means were devised, and the country, that is, what was left of the country, went on as of old. Very few persons supposed that the war, if there should be a war, would last long; it might be six months—possibly a little longer; but the good sense of the people, north and south, might be trusted to make for peace and re-union. Little the north then knew of the bitterness of the South, and still less the South knew of the grim determination of the North.

THE GREAT KANAWHA VALLEY, IN 1850.

BY LEWIS A. MARTIN.

The Great Kanawha Valley in 1850 was a part of the state of Virginia, it was sparsely populated, and much of its territory was covered with virgin forest. There were magnificent groves of timber made up of all the woods which are so valuable in the manufacture of furniture and for general utility, not only were the mountains covered, but the valleys also contained splendid groves of finest timber. Walnut, Cherry, Oak, Poplar, Chestnut, Maple, Birch, Sugar Ash, Elm, Hickory, Hemlock and Cedar with various other kinds of valuable woods of which we have not room to speak. It was a sight which struck the observer every where, to see the pioneers clearing land for cultivation, and building long lines of worm fence built from rails of walnut, oak, ash, cherry and poplar; and the remnant of this valuable product, after the construction of his fence and cabin, were rolled together in heaps and burned, simply to make room for other business. The people were not aware of the great value of that which they so wantonly destroyed. Many of these people have lived to see the day the stumps of the trees they so carelessly destroyed, were dug up and the roots manufactured into planks for furniture and other fine work.

The manufacture of salt was the only industry of any importance which was then carried on in the valley, at that time it was at the zenith of its greatness. There were more than thirty salt furnaces in successful operation at that time, all of them being situated on the banks of the Big Kanawha river—and extending from Charleston

to near Brownstown, some ten miles above the said town of Charleston. These furnaces were owned by persons and companies each had several salt wells from which the supplies of salt water was obtained, each plant also owned enough land from which fuel was obtained for running the engines and for producing the steam for the manufacture of the salt. All of the fuel used for a number of years in the salt manufacture, was wood cut from the mountain slopes, shoved down in shutes to the valley and hauled to the furnaces. Everything was primitive; the pipes through which the salt water was conveyed from the wells to the furnace, were made of poplar logs from six to eight inches in diameter and from 16 to 20 feet in length; these logs were bored out by hand, two men with a long auger would ream out a hole from end to end some 3 or 4 inches in diameter and they were fitted together and pipe lines of a mile in length laid, through which night and day you could by putting your ear to the edge of the logs or line, hear the briny fluid rushing on to the furnace to be boiled in to salt. The wood for fuel had been abandoned by the date with which we start this article, but not before the mountain sides facing the Kanawha river had been entirely stripped of its rich burden of timber. Then it was that the manufacturers learned that the mountains and valleys were filled with the finest fuel the world had hid in its bosom, Coal, Bituminous, or soft coal. And let me here digress, and say that West Virginia has more and better coal underlying its surface than any other state in these great Union of states. West Virginia has the finest cokeing coals to be found any where, and the great store of the Black Diamonds, is only now in its infancy of development. West Virginia has been ranked as third, as a coal producer and I am told that with the present census she is second, sure it is in the not distant future West Virginia will be first in the production of coal, and the Great Kanawha Valley, with its tributary, the New River Valley, is the richest in kind and quality of coals of any spot on this continent. After witnessing the destruction of so much of the timber on the face of the mountains along the river, the people were amazed when they beheld the coal in such vast quantities being wrested from the mountains, and it was often remarked, "They have skimmed the mountains and now they are removing the entrails."

These furnaces manufactured vast quantities of salt, some of them

turning out as much as one hundred barrels daily, and some of these barrels would weigh six and seven hundred pounds each. An ordinary salt barrel, such as was then in use, was considered to hold seven bushels, this would be seven hundred bushels for one furnace, and will give some idea of the extent of the output; but many of the furnaces did not come up to this high standard of production. It was said that the Kanawha salt was the most valuable for meat packing of any to be found in this country, and was the favorite in all the western markets.

Some of these furnaces employed from one to two hundred men, mostly slaves from East Virginia. An able bodied negro man at that time brought about $150 per annum, with board and clothes, but the wardrobe of these negroes were not elaborate. They were clothed in the cheapest coarse cotton goods in summer and the same class of coarse woollen goods in winter. By reason of this slavery, labor was degraded, not only was it disreputable to labor, but labor was very poorly paid. Seventy five cents per day was thought to be a fair compensation for common labor and he board himself. The salt business in the Kanawha Valley required a vast amount of labor, there was much work to be done besides the mining and hauling of the coal and running of the furnaces, there were a great quantity of supplies necessary, such as getting out timber for the building and keeping in repair the plants, in their several departments, the making and furnishing of barrels in which the salt was packed, the building of flat boats and barges, in which the salt was floated to market. A crew of seven or eight men, one of whom was an experienced pilot, would float a pair of barges or flat boats, 150 feet in length, and containing 2,000 barrels of salt down the Kanawha, Ohio and Mississippi rivers, sometimes to New Orleans; and if the weather got very dry while they were making these long trips and the water became so low that the boats ceased to run up the river, they would foot it all the way back and be ready to repeat the operation with the first boating stage. These salt boatmen were a jolly lot of fellows, hardy, strong and hopeful; as a class they were trustworthy and honest as could be found anywhere, in any land or in any age. Among these boatmen were some very unique characters, such as Lewis Carrick, Creed Flood, M. Harkrider, Gus Boggs, George and Gip Pancake, Ranken Wiley, Peter Simpson,

Pen Wright, Jarrett Bowen, John M. Gardner and a host of others too numbers to mention. Most of the names I have mentioned were Pilots and commanded better wages than the ordinary hand. All of them have made their last trip and now in the great beyond, but they are not forgotten, but are remembered, and will be by posterity as long as the history of these times shall be remembered. Some times a small army of Kanawha boatmen would go down on a rise, taking great fleets of boats laden with salt and coal, after reaching their destination, they usually came back together, or on the same boat, traveling on the deck of the boat and cooking their own food, sleeping anywhere, roughing it, in order to save their earnings, for the pay was not sufficient to justify the luxury of a berth in the cabin. Some stirring times were often seen on the deck of those steamers, a little bad blood and a little whisky or both in large quantity and it would not be long until trouble was on. Some times Pittsburg and Kanawha would meet on the deck of one of these steamers and some of the most brutal and bloody fights would be the result.

I have heard some laughable incidents happening along about these times. The steamboat was then in its infancy and many of them were not so elaborate or commodious as at present. The desperate man, the bully and the bluffer was there also. A good story is told on these fellows, a crowd of them coming on a Kanawha steamer at Cincinnati, pretty well loaded down with whisky, they had heard that all the staterooms were taken up and they swore they would have a chamber as they called it, or they would kill some body; so they came up to the clerk's office and asked for a chamber but were told that they were all taken, whereupon one of the fellows with his hat thrown back on the back of his head and looking desperate, out with a dangerous looking bowie knife and stuck it in the desk of the Clerk and said, "By —— G— Sir I want a Chamber." The Clerk says, "All right sir," pulled out his drawer and drew from it a large revolver and presenting the the gun at the belligerent passenger and holding it steadily, with his aim right at his face, he exclaimed in a low but very emphatic tone of voice, "I have told you sir, that my chambers are all full," the passenger looking in the muzzle of that gun saw that the man spoke the truth as to the condition of his chambers, and he hesitated just a moment

and then seemingly in the best of humor and with perfect satisfaction said, "Oh, I see.' It is safe to say that no more trouble was had with him during that trip.

One of the customs of these times was to pay the laborer entirely in store goods, the only exception being the boatmen, who was compelled to have his pay at the end of his trip, and was paid off by the salt companies agent before starting for his return home.

The poor fellow who worked at the furnaces scarcely ever got any money for his work, he took an order to the company store at the end of the week and on every piece of goods or groceries he bought he paid a very large profit to the Salt Company. You will readily see that 75 cents per day or $20.00 per month the fellow would not be able to accumulate large surplus.

The Civil War found the Kanawha Valley in this condition, with its one industry and its sparse population of whites, many of whom were ekeing out a miserable existence, uneducated and with no system of education, and no public revenue for educational purposes, you will see therefore, how difficult it was for the masses to attain to anything like common education, much less an ample education. The war resulted in the utter extinction of the institution of slavery "Old things passed away, and all things became new." A new state sprang into existence. The new state of West Virginia. "Child of the storm." The Constitution of the new state guaranteed the rights of the people, laws were enacted in pursuance of the new Constituiton, providing for the education and enlightenment of every child in the bounds of the state, a system was evolved, a just system of taxation was provided for, and laid where it should be, on the property of the state, for the education of the young and rising generation. The makers of that constitution, the Fathers of the New State saw error in the past and resolved to lay safeguards for the future, they put it into the Constitution and made it of highest importance, to provide educational advantages for the then new and rising generation. They saw that ignorance was a menace to the state and its peace and safety, and they provided for the education of the citizenship of the state whether black or white, native or alien, all have an interest in this sacred heritage, and now the state of West Virginia has not only as fine a system of education as any of the states in the Union but she has a permanent or irreducible

and then seemingly in the best of humor and with perfect satisfaction said, "Oh, I see.' It is safe to say that no more trouble was had with him during that trip.

One of the customs of these times was to pay the laborer entirely in store goods, the only exception being the boatmen, who was compelled to have his pay at the end of his trip, and was paid off by the salt companies agent before starting for his return home.

The poor fellow who worked at the furnaces scarcely ever got any money for his work, he took an order to the company store at the end of the week and on every piece of goods or groceries he bought he paid a very large profit to the Salt Company. You will readily see that 75 cents per day or $20.00 per month the fellow would not be able to accumulate large surplus.

The Civil War found the Kanawha Valley in this condition, with its one industry and its sparse population of whites, many of whom were ekeing out a miserable existence, uneducated and with no system of education, and no public revenue for educational purposes, you will see therefore, how difficult it was for the masses to attain to anything like common education, much less an ample education. The war resulted in the utter extinction of the institution of slavery "Old things passed away, and all things became new." A new state sprang into existence. The new state of West Virginia. "Child of the storm." The Constitution of the new state guaranteed the rights of the people, laws were enacted in pursuance of the new Constituiton, providing for the education and enlightenment of every child in the bounds of the state, a system was evolved, a just system of taxation was provided for, and laid where it should be, on the property of the state, for the education of the young and rising generation. The makers of that constitution, the Fathers of the New State saw error in the past and resolved to lay safeguards for the future, they put it into the Constitution and made it of highest importance, to provide educational advantages for the then new and rising generation. They saw that ignorance was a menace to the state and its peace and safety, and they provided for the education of the citizenship of the state whether black or white, native or alien, all have an interest in this sacred heritage, and now the state of West Virginia has not only as fine a system of education as any of the states in the Union but she has a permanent or irreducible

fund in her treasury of three quarters of a million dollars. Our school system is an honor to the state and the age in which we live, and be it said to the honor of the people, that all parties have contributed to this educational success. The democratic and republican parties fighting each other fiercely over other questions of a public character, have vied, each with the other to make their school system the glorious success it now is. Capital poured into the Valley after the close of the Civil War, followed by an ever increasing population of aggressive business men, hailing from the north, east east, west and south, the vast natural wealth of the valley has been developed, railroads have been builded, and the Great Kanawha river has been improved, making slack water navigation reliable the year round, from its source to the Ohio river. The coal interest has been and is being thoroughly developed, millions of bushels are daily rushed to the markets of the world, both by rail and water. Cities, towns and villages have grown up along all thoroughfares, the stage coach has disappeared as a means of travel, and in its stead the finest palace cars are furnished, with rapid transit to any part of the world. In the Great Kanawha Valley is the Capitol of the new state, and from a mean village in 1850 it has grown to be, in 1902 a city of 12,000 population. A fine city, with fine business houses, fine churches, fine public buildings, lighted by electricity, natural gas and heated in this same modern way, has splendid streets, shaded with the most lovely foliage which the Maker has given to mankind, has the most chivalrous and kind-hearted citizenship and the handsomest women on earth—and the Great Kanawha Valley is still on the rising tide, still looking upward with great expectations, it doth not appear how great it shall be.

[The above description of the salt business of the Kanawha Valley, as it was previous to the civil war, was written by Mr. Martin while in the Consular service of the U. S. in Mexico, where he now is. He wrote from recollection entirely, having no records to which he could refer for data, but his recollection of the salt furnaces and flat boat and pilots, his knowledge of the customs and hardships of the people, enables him to draw a pleasing comparison between then and now, which makes an interesting chapter in the history of the new State of West Virginia.—ED.]

A CORRECTION AS TO COL. DAVID SHEPHERD.

Mr. Editor:—Since the publication of the sketch of Col. David Shepherd, which appeared in the April issue of the West Virginia Historical Magazine the great-great-granddaughter of the subject of the sketch has kindly called my attention to an error which occurred therein and which she desired should be corrected. The error consisted in the statement therein made that David Shepherd had but three sisters and one brother, when the fact is, his father, Thomas Shepherd, had *ten* children—five sons and five daughters, viz.: William, Thomas, John Abraham and David, Susannah, Mary, Martha, Sarah and Elizabeth.

The importance of this correction will be appreciated from the fact that what purports to be historical data should be accurate, or as nearly so as possible, as statements of to-day should not be misleading in their details, so that future generations may rely upon their authenticity. Especially is this important in an historical magazine in which family histories are preserved, to avoid complications which might ensue.

Trusting that this insertion may be made in your forthcoming issue and that I may receive a copy of the same,

I am, yours very truly,

G. L. CRANMER.

Wheeling, W. Va., June, 1902.

HISTORICAL SKETCH OF ADAM SEE, ESQ.

About the year 1760 several families of immigrants from Holland came from New York to the Valley of the South Branch of the Potomac. Among these was George See, the father of Adam and Michael See, who will be mentioned in this sketch. He settled on a farm near Moorefield, in Hardy county, Va. Here (probably) Adam See was born November 29th, 1764. These settlers were a thrifty, energetic people; and all seem to have had some financial means for securing their new homes in Virginia. Adam See, after some preparatory study elsewhere, was a student in Dickinson College, Carlisle, Pa.; he then studied law, and for a time attended the courts of Hardy and Pendleton counties.

In 1793 he and a younger brother, Michael, crossed the Allegheny into Randolph county, where Adam See was admitted to the bar in that year. In 1795 he married Margaret, a daughter of Jacob Warwick, a prominent land owner and stock raiser in Pocahontas county, Va., (a long list of whose descendants is given in Rev. W. T. Price's "History of Pocahontas County"), and lived near Huttonsville, twelve miles southeast from the county-seat, in the beautiful Tygart's Valley. Here they reared a family of ten children, three sons and seven daughters, all of whom reared families, so that there were more than fifty grandchildren. He was appointed Prosecuting Attorney of his county in 1798 and often afterwards. He represented his county in the House of Delegates in the sessions of 1814-'15, 1815-'16 and 1822-'23.

By the Act of the Virginia Legislature providing for the famous Constitutional Convention of 1829-'30, each of the twenty-four Senatorial Districts was allowed to send four Delegates. These were to be nominated in a primary assembly held within the district, which they represented, though the nominees might live anywhere in the State; but they must be elected by the voters of the district, which they represented. This was done, no doubt, to permit the people to choose the ablest men they could find to voice their sentiments. The Sixteenth District embraced the counties of Kanawha, Mason, Cabell, Randolph, Harrison, Lewis, Wood and Logan. The primary for the Sixteenth District was held at Mason Court House March 3rd, 1829, and the nominees were Edwin S. Duncan, of Harrison; John Laidley, of Cabell; Lewis Summers, of Kanawha, and Adam See, of Randolph. The printed paper in which Adam See accepted the nomination now lies before me, a part of which I will quote: "Professing as we do, to live under a Democratic Republican Government, and that it is such a government we are about to remodel and improve, we are naturally led to inquire where the sovereignty of the government should be vested, I ask, where so properly or so safely as in the hands of the people for whose benefit the government is to be formed, upon whose shoulders it must be supported, and upon whom its provisions must operate? In what ratio? In that of equal rights and duties, qualified agreeably to the principles of our Bill of Rights. * * * In the performance of those functions of the government where, from the

nature of things, it is impracticable for the people to act personally, they must act by their representatives; it follows as a natural deduction that, their own rights being equal, their representatives ought as far as possible, to be in equal proportion to the numbers of their constituents. * * * The discipline of fifty years' experience may enable us to amend our system in all its three great co-ordinate branches, the functions of which should be more distinct, and less dependent on each other. The County Court system and the ministerial departments may all be improved by a change in the mode of appointments, and by making them more responsible, individually, for the faithful discharge of their duties."

This paper was written April 28th, and the convention did not assemble till October 5, 1829. Five months of busy thinking and discussing had intervened. And in that some terms may have been more carefully defined; but here we have the great principles of political rights and duties very clearly asserted. "The sovereignty," or supreme authority, of the civil "government should be vested in the hands of the people." And, as to representation, "Their," the people's, "own rights being equal, their representatives ought, as far as possible, to be in equal proportion to the *numbers* of their constituents."

"Constituents?" Some one might say that a representative's constituents are those who *voted* for him. It is used in this sense sometimes. But it is plain that Mr. See does not use the word in this sense here. He had a wife, whom he loved with chivalric devotion; he had ten children and many grandchildren, and there were his neighbors' mothers, wives, sisters, daughters and minor children. Do you mean to say that this man, who had a heart so large and unselfish, thought that all these had no need of a good government? It is evident that he meant the whole body of citizens, all who are represented. It may be that he meant that there ought to be some limitation of the suffrage. He speaks approvingly of "our Bill of Rights." And *that* contained, as a needful condition of the 'Elective Franchise,' this clause: "Sufficient evidence of permanent, common interest with and attachment to the community." I have seen this clause criticised, as if it necessarily meant the same thing as "Freehold Suffrage." A man who is a citizen of the State of West Virginia, changing his domicile from one county in the

State to another, must remain in his new home for some time before he can vote there. Why? Partly, no doubt, that he may give "Sufficient evidence, etc." A man may be a citizen of the State, but he must show that he is not a vagrant before he is permitted to take part in the government of a particular community. That the subject of this sketch was sound on the questions of broad suffrage and equal representation seems to be plainly shown by the fact that only two counties in that part of Virginia, now included in West Virginia, gave so small a proportion of their votes *for* the ratification of the New Constitution as Randolph; they were Brooke and Ohio. And their *location* would help to account for their vote. If you judge a machine by the effectiveness of its work, you must believe that Adam See was an effective coworker in enlarging our temple of liberty. This sketch would be very imperfect did we not draw some other lines to make the picture more complete. And we would leave the fact of his great influence over those who knew him intimately unexplained. For he was not a brilliant or eloquent man. In a letter written to his wife from Richmond, November 9th, 1814, he says: "If Mrs. Brady needs any attention, in your power to afford, I know you will not let her suffer." I do not know who she was, but the little sentence suggests a large page in his biography. His hand and his heart, and often his crib, was open for the relief of the needy around him. He was careful not to encourage thriftlessness or idleness by his liberality, but many a needy one found him a wise helper. He was for many years a practicing lawyer, and there is good reason to believe that he kept more cases out of court than he ever plead in it. His zeal in getting his neighbors to settle their difficulties without litigation was greater than his desire for the reputation, and reward of an able advocate. And we have it on what we believe good authority that it was often said by men who could not settle a matter in controversy between them, "I'll leave it to Lawyer See; whatever he says about it will be right." But it is said that law-breakers and criminals, of the harder sort did not like to come before him as Prosecuting Attorney. He was a man of sound judgment and practical wisdom. But above this, he was a man of inflexible integrity. No temptation could induce him to depart from truth or right. A distinguished preacher said of him: "I never knew a man who in all his dealings with men lived more completely according to the Golden Rule."

He was a man of great industry and energy. And he was, in days when the use of intoxicants was rather free, not only temperate himself, but he so strongly believed, and could show by so many sad examples that dissipation was great folly and sin, that he induced his own immediate descendants and many others to live temperate lives. He never in this made the great mistake that many weak advocates of temperance reform make. He never led anyone to think that the chief or only sin in this self-destructive use of intoxicants, was committed by the men who made and sold them. That may be very great; but the lesson, as it came from his lips, was the great wrong and folly in a man's selling his liberty and his soul for the gratification of an appetite. He never taught his children or his neighbors that if they could in any way get the whiskey there was no harm in drinking it; no, never!

He was one of that race of people who recently, in South Africa, have won the sympathy and admiration of the world by their heroism, endurance and love of liberty, and many of their best traits of character were strongly developed in him, and this was the secret of his great influence over his people. The great lesson for us is that a man may be worth remembering who could not sway assemblies by his eloquence, as the trees of the forest are shaken by the wind: a man may be worthy of our admiration, our imitation and our affection for his ever-enduring adherence to truth and right, the welfare of men and the honor of God.

C. S. M. SEE.

Philippi, W. Va.

KANAWHA COUNTY RECORDS.

We have been requested by many readers to publish some of the early records of Kanawha county, and we have endeavored to satisfy this request by giving the records of the County Court for a short period after the organization of this county, also mention of some of the early deeds and wills, and a list of marriages.

Kanawha county was formed by the Act of 14th November, 1788, and took effect October 1, 1789. It was formed out of the counties of Greenbrier and Montgomery. Its boundaries began at the mouth of Big Sandy, in Montgomery county, and ran up said river to the

Cumberland Mountain and along said mountain to the Great Kanawha river at the end of Gauley Mountain, and along the same to the Harrison county line and with it to the Ohio river and down the same to the beginning.

This may have been very clear to the people of that time, but we doubt if there is a man, woman or child now in West Virginia that can tell the exact boundary of this county in 1789.

This county, like all of the new counties, had but few people therein, and those few had a corner on all the offices. It is said at the first election held in this county the polls were kept open for three days and the voters numbered but thirteen, but there were others that were not voters that lived within the county.

Commonwealth of Virginia:

Records of the County of Kanawha.

Kanawha, ss.:

On the fifth day of October, in the year one thousand seven hundred and eighty-nine, Thomas Lewis, Robert Clendenin, Francis Watkins, Charles McClung, Benjamin Strother, William Clendenin, David Robinson, George Alderson, Leonard Morris and James Van Bibber, gentlemen, assembled at the place appointed by law for holding courts in this county, and a commission being produced from His Excellency the Governor, constituting the above gentlemen justices of the peace for said county, with authority as well to execute within the limits of said county the duties of their offices, as prescribed by law, as to be of the Court to be held for said county, of which one of the first six named justices is to be one, the said gentlemen respectfully took the oath prescribed by law.

A commission from His Excellency was produced appointing Thomas Lewis, gentleman, Sheriff of this county, whereupon he took the oaths required by law for the due execution of his said office and, with George Clendenin and William Arbuckle, his securities, entered into bond in the penalty of one thousand pounds, as the law directs.

Ordered that William Cavandish be appointed clerk of this court, and he took the oath prescribed by law.

On motion of Thomas Lewis, gentleman, Sheriff of this county, John Edwards is appointed his deputy, who thereupon took the oath of office required by law.

Ordered that Abner Prior and Joseph Woods be recommended to His Excellency the Governor as proper persons to execute the office of magistrates of this county.

Ordered that Andrew Anderson be appointed constable at Belleville, in this county, and Amos Morris at Point Pleasant.

Ordered that Reuben Slaughter, gentleman, be recommended to the president and professors of the College of William and Mary as a proper person to execute the office of surveyor of this county.

Ordered that Benjamin Strother, David Robinson and John Van Bibber be appointed commissioners of the revenue in this county, whereupon Benjamin Strother and David Robinson, two of them, took the oaths required by law.

Thomas Lewis, gentleman, came into court and resigned his office of sheriff of this county, whereupon Robert Clendenin and Francis Watkins, gentlemen, are recommended to His Excellency the Governor as proper persons to execute the said office.

Ordered that the public buildings for the use of this county be erected on the lands of George Clendenin, at the mouth of Elk river, or as near thereto as the situation will admit, and that until the erection of said buildings, court be held at the Mansion House of George Clendenin.

Court adjourned till to-morrow morning, nine o'clock.

(Signed) ROBERT CLENDENING.

At a court continued and held for Kanawha October 6th, 1789.

Present—Robert Clendenin, Francis Watkins, Charles McClung, Benjamin Strother, William Clendenin, David Robinson, George Alderson, Leonard Morris, James Van Bibber, gentlemen.

Ordered that George Clendenin be recommended to His Excellency the Governor for county lieutenant; Thomas Lewis, colonel; Daniel Boone, lieutenant-colonel; William Clendenin, major; Leonard Cooper and John Morris, captains, James Van Bibber and John Young, lieutenants, and William Owens and Alexander Clendenin, ensigns, in the militia of this county.

Ordered that William Hughes be appointed constable in the bounds of Captain John Morris's Company; Thomas Asburry, on Cole river, and Abraham Baker at Clendenin's Station.

Ordered that William Morris be recommended to His Excellency the Governor as a proper person to fill the office of magistrate in this county.

Ordered that the Clerk prepare a Petition to be laid before the General Assembly of this Commonwealth, on behalf of this county, stating the disadvantages under which the inhabitants of this county labor from the remoteness of their situation, the thinness of neighborhoods and the frequent incursions of the Indians and praying to be exonerated from the payment of taxes, until the blessings of peace is imparted to them, and they are enabled to derive those advantages from their industry which the fertility of their soil promises.

On motion of William H. Cavendish, gentleman, Francis Watkins is appointed a deputy clerk and thereupon took the oaths requisite.

Ordered that William Droddy and William Boggs be recommended to his Excellency the Governor, as Coroner of this county.

Court adjourned to Court in course.

(Signed) ROBERT CLENDENIN.

At a Court held for Kanawha County the 1st day of February, 1790.

Present—Robert Clendenin, William Clendenin, David Robinson, Geo. Alderson, gentlemen.

Reuben Slaughter produced a Commission to this Court from his Excellency the Governor of the Commonwealth, appointing him Surveyor in this County, whereupon he gave Bond and Security and took the requisite oaths required by law.

Ordered that Andrew Donnally, Sr., William Morris and Joseph Carrol, do view a way beginning at the town ford on Gauley River through the narrows on the north side of the river up to Morris Cabbin above the Upper ford on said river and make report thereof to our next term.

This Court adjourned to Court in course.

(Signed) ROBERT CLENDENIN.

At a Court for Kanawha County the 1st day of March, 1790.

Present—William Clendenin, Charles McClung, Leonard Morris, James Van Bibber.

Robert Clendenin, Esquire, comes into Court and desires leave to resign his office as Magistrate in this County.

Thomas Teass, Plaintiff,
against) Case.
Hughes, defendant.

Joseph Carrol of this County comes into Court and undertakes for the defendant that in case he shall be cast on this suit, he shall satisfy and pay the condemnation of the Court or render his body to prison in execution for the same or that he the said Joseph Carrol will do it for him.

John Carter, plft,
against) Case.
Joseph Edwards, deft.

This day came the defendant in his proper person and the plaintiff tho solemnly called came not but made default, nor in his suit further prosecuted, therefore on the prayer of the said defendant, it is considered by the Court that he recover against the plaintiff damages according to law and his costs by him expended and his defence in this behalf expended.

A view for a road was ordered beginning at the State road at William Hughes, from thence down the East side of Kanawha river to the mouth of Elk and there to cross the Kanawha, from thence down said river to the mouth of Coal river and make report to us at next Court.

And with other road orders made, the Court adjourned in course.

(Signed) CHARLES MCCLUNG.

Next term 5 Apl, 1790.

DEEDS, WILLS, ETC.

The first deed recorded is from Thomas Lewis to Benjamin Clin, dated 5 Apl, 1790, for five shillings, conveyed a lot of land in the town of Point Pleasant, at the mouth of the Great Kanawha, on the back street in said town, being the "*uper of lott No. 4.*"

The next deed recorded is dated 24 July, 1789, made by Joseph Willard Gibbs of Phila., to William Ingles of the town of Bellville in the County of Greenbrier which conveys 295 acres, about three-fourths of a mile south east of Belleville, on the Ohio river.

Then George Clendenin makes three deeds to his daughters Cynthia, Parthenia and Mary, giving them each two negroes, horses and cows.

Thos. Upton conveys to Thos. Davis 240 acres at mouth of Davis Creek.

The first will recorded is that of Thomas Hughes.

William Clendenin is appointed Administrator of James Hale.

Wm. Morris will is dated 28 Feb., 1792, and recorded in 1794, and Elizabeth Morris, his wife, "came into Court and broke the will of said William Morris."

The Administrator of Michael See is appointed, also of Edward McClung, Roland Wheeler and Shadrach Harriman.

(This last deceased, Shadrach Harriman, was the last white man killed by an Indian in the Kanawha Valley.)

EARLY MARRIAGES IN KANAWHA COUNTY.

Thomas Smith and Elizabeth Young, 10 Apl, 1792, by F. Watkins.
Wm. Miller and Elizabeth Frick, 16 Jan., 1793, by F. Watkins.
Martin Harwick and Susan Ellison, 21 Mar., 1793, by F. Watkins.
Chas. Young and Sarah Morris, 29 Mar., 1793, by F. Watkins.
Samuel Henderson and Sally Donnally, 1 May, 1793, by F. Watkins.

David Melbourne and Susanna Harriman, 16 Mar., 1794, by F. Watkins.

In 1795 by Jas. Johnston:
Joseph Burrell and Mary Upton.
Joseph Clyman and Ruth Briggs.
Mathias Young and Melley Holliday.
Wm. Rider and Polly Tacket.
Jacob Van Bibber and Sarah Miller.
Fleming Cobb and Sarah Morris.
Samuel Cobble and Susannah Crow.
Jas. Moss and Elizabeth Carrol.
By same up to 7 Aug., 1796:
Benj. Hadley and Nancy Reyling.
John Tacket and Johanna Castale.
Jas. Robertson and Elizabeth Simaptos.
Jos. Hillard and Elizabeth Morris.
Thos. Buls and Mary Wilson.
Daniel Irvin and Peggy Crompton.
Robt. Iron and Mary Balleton.

John Morris and May Ann Coleman.
By F. Watkins:
James Van Bibber and Jean Ervin, Apl. 13, 1796.
James Van Bibber and Louise Reynolds, Jan. 6, 1797.
Wm. Owens and Nancy Creage, Apl. 3, 1797.
Machias Van Bibber and Margaret Gardner, Apl. 16, 1797.
Goodrich Slaughter and Hannah Van Bibber, May 17, 1797.
John Megs and Pene Clendenin, July 4, 1794.
Wm. Hall and Polly Seamonds, Oct. 17, 1794.
Lawrence Bryan and Mary Morris, Nov. 9, 1794.
Reported by Jas. Johnston to May, 1799:
John Young and Kasiah Townsend.
Stephen Tacket and Mary Kerre.
John Buckle and Rebecca Hind Upton.
James Thompson and Elizabeth Thornton.
Jas. McRoberts and Polly Kenner.
John Cavender and Sarah Casdorph.
Thos. Asbury and Leah Catlet.
David Smith and Mary Briggs.
Michael Buck and Lucretia Prior.
Jas. Gordon and Isabella Caliston.
Thos. Cobbs and Elizabeth See.
Nathan Huddleston and Margaret Girard.
Caleb Price and Ann Smith.
Joseph Upton and Mary See.
Reported up to Apl. 26, 1800, by Jas. Johnston:
Ruel Daggs and Nancy Johnston.
Rowland Wheeler and Nancy Hill.
Charles Venable and Catharine Morris.
James Shirkey and Margaret Beals.
John Huff and Barbary Darling.
Henry Harman and Elizabeth Parsinger.
William Clayton and Sarah Smith.
John Tacket and Sarah Hilyard.
John Slack and Comfort Samuels.
Jas. Murdock and Jane Graham.
Henry Montgomery and Nancy King.
George and Lucy, slaves of Geo. Welch.

MASON AND DIXON LINE.

"The Evolution of the Mason and Dixon Line" by Morgan P. Robinson, published in pamphlet form by The Oracle Pub. Co., Richmond, Va., is before us. It appears to have been carefully prepared, research made into many records, and information given that is known but to the few, and withal is well written and interesting.

By some this line is regarded as the boundary between the free and the Slave States; between the North and South, so called. By others it is supposed to have been intended to make the Pennsylvania line extend to the Ohio river, and by some mistake or accident, it failed to reach its destination, but when the course and distance of this line was given, there were no free states, all were slave owners, and it was not known whether there was any river in the vicinity of the western limit of said line. Mr. Mason and Mr. Dixon were surveyors appointed to locate and mark the line on the ground, according to the course and distance given. When the line passed the western boundary of Maryland, Virginia then became interested and on running said line, Virginia lost her county of Youghiogheny, Monongalia county lost her Court House, and many who thought they were Virginians, found themselves in Pennsylvania. It has been said that there were Virginia Courts held where Pittsburg now is, held for the District of West Augusta. The terminus of this line not only marks the corner of Pennsylvania, but the corners of Marshall, Wetzel and Monongalia counties of West Virginia.

Copies can be had of this pamphlet for twenty-five cents of the publishers.

Dr. John P. Hale,

President of the W. Va. Historical and Antiquarian Society,

DIED,

at his residence in Charleston, West Va.,

July 11, 1902. Aged 78 years.

Vol. 2. OCTOBER, 1902. No. 4.

The West Virginia Historical Magazine

Quarterly,

CHARLESTON, W. VA.

Published by the West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society.

W. S. LAIDLEY, Editor.

SUBSCRIPTIONS, per year, - - - - - - - - $1.00
SINGLE COPIES, - - - - - - - - - - - .25
For Advertising, enquire of the Editor.

THE TRIBUNE COMPANY, PRINTERS,
CHARLESTON, W. VA.

CONTENTS FOR OCTOBER, 1902.

———

"Birthplace of President Jackson," by.....*W. S. Laidley.*
"General Charles Lee," by.....*John D. Sutton.*
"Kentuckians at Point Pleasant Battle," by.....*Miss L. K. Poage.*
" Thomas Shepherd of Shepherdstown," by.....*Mrs. F. J. Allen* 23
"Dr. W. H. Ruffner," by.....*Mrs. A. H. K. Barclay.* 33
"Genealogy of Mr. V. H. Patrick," by.....*Rev. R. D. Roller.*
"The Camerons of Virginia," by.....*Rev. W. T. Price.*
"Rev. Alexander Campbell," by.....*G. L. Cranmer.*
"Errata in July, 1902, Number"
List of Illustrations .....
Index to Vol. 1, 1901.....
Index to Vol. 2, 1902..... } *Miss M. D. Laidley,* Librarian.

The West Virginia Historical and Antiquarian Society.

BIRTHPLACE OF PRESIDENT ANDREW JACKSON. (?)

BY W. S. LAIDLEY.

It is usually stated that he was born in South Carolina, on the 15th of March, 1767.

We propose to show that he was born in what is now Berkeley county, West Virginia.

It is stated that Hugh Jackson of Carricksfergus, Ireland, had a son Andrew, and that Andrew Jackson married Elizabeth Hutchison, and that they came to America in 1765. Some say that this Andrew Jackson landed at Charleston, S. C., and pushed his way up the Catawba river to the Waxhaw settlement, and there died soon after his arrival. That his wife died, and all her children died before the close of the revolution, except this son Andrew. This would make the matter of ascertaining the facts from the family impossible, and we must look elsewhere for such facts as will establish the truth of the case.

There is no authority given by any of the writers as to how Andrew Jackson reached the Waxhaw settlement. This settlement is on the border between North and South Carolina, and the stream Waxhaw runs from North Carolina westward into the Catawba river in South Carolina.

In Windsor's History of America, V-304, it is said: "Besides the early coast-line settlements and those along the bottom lands of the northeastern streams, there came, mainly after Braddock's defeat, a remarkable tide of immigration from the western frontiers of Virginia and Pennsylvania into Central and Western North Carolina." Brittanica says that in 1729 Carolina was divided into North and South Carolina, and that the population then was

about 13,000. and was all along the coast and not fifty miles inland. That a tide of emigration from Virginia and Pennsylvania and from Europe poured into these colonies, so that in 1776 there was a chain of settlements from the coast to the mountains. The inducement was not only the climate and soil, but its liberal form of government and especially its freedom of religion.

Windsor says that from these settlers came the celebrated Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence.

The Waxhaw settlement is in the central part of the State. Those going from the frontiers of Virginia and Pennsylvania went down the Valley of Virginia into North Carolina, and this immigration was much greater than has been supposed, and no doubt the Waxhaw settlement was made by the German and Scotch-Irish that came from Pennsylvania and the Valley of Virginia.

Appletons Biorgaphies says Andrew Jackson was born in the Waxhaw settlement, on the border of North and South Carolina, March 15, 1767; that his father, Andrew Jackson, came from the north coast of Ireland in 1765, and his wife was Elizabeth Hutchinson; and that the President spoke of South Carolina as his native State.

Lossing says his parents were from the north of Ireland and were among the early Scotch-Irish settlers in the upper part of South Carolina, in the vicinity of Waxhaw creek, and that the President was born in North Carolina: and it appears that all the family had died in 1781 except Andrew.

Chambers Encyc. says that Andrew Jackson, the father, was a Scotchman and emigrated to America in 1765, and soon afterwards died. In an American note to the above it is said he was born in North Carolina.

We suppose that some early writer stated the time and place of his birth and the subsequent writers took the same from what they read of it.

We have seen Bliss, Spofford, Sumner and others besides those mentioned; most of them give his birth March 15, 1767, and either in North Carolina or South Carolina.

We will now give some undisputable facts that would indicate that there must be some mistake as to the birthplace of said Andrew Jackson, President, etc.

Cooke's Virginia, 325, says: "The Lower Valley of Virginia is

full of old traditions handed down from father to son: one is here repeated. It is said that an Irish laboring man and his wife came about 1767 to the house of James Strode, a German land holder, on the lower Opequon, and lived with him some years, during which time a son was born to them. That they resolved to go further southward and set off, but the children in the Strode family followed, begging that they would leave the baby, which was a great favorite with them. When they stopped for a moment and the baby was laid on the grass, the Strode children snatched him up and would have carried him off had they not been prevented. The journey was then resumed and the wanderers finally reached Waxhaws, in North Carolina. Here the boy grew up and in due time made his mark, since he was Andrew Jackson, President of the United States. The tradition is probably true. Jackson is said to have been doubtful about his birthplace. A spring near the Strode house is still called "Jackson's spring."

Dr. John P. Hale, President of the West Virginia Historical Society, wrote as follows: "There is a tradition in the Valley that no less a personage than President Andrew Jackson spent a small portion (a few weeks) of his early life not far from the Pack-Horse Ford."

The story goes that about 1766-67 several Irish families came this way enroute to North Carolina. When they had crossed the Potomac into the Valley, one of the families, Andrew Jackson and wife, secured comfortable quarters at a farm house and made arrangements to remain a few weeks or months. During their stay Andrew Jackson, Jr., made his appearance upon the stage of action. When the newcomer and the mother had acquired health and strength to stand the travel, the family resumed their journey to North Carolina. There is much reason to believe, from other facts connected with the story, that the youthful Jackson of the Pack-Horse-Ford and the afterward President Jackson was one and the same person.

James Strode was an early settler in Frederick county, and his land was located a few miles east of Martinsburg, on the waters of the Opequon. He was one of the first Justices of Berkeley county in 1772: was one of the Commissioners of the Revenue: was one appointed to let the building of the new court house to contractors, and was one of the trustees of the town of Martinsburg.

Abraham Shepherd afterwards became the owner of the Strode place. We became interested in the story and visited the spot, and Mrs. Frank Shepherd told us the tradition that came down to her family, and stated that the spring was yet known as the Jackson spring, and the little house on the roadside near her home was known as the Jackson house; and that a long time ago this house was located near the spring and subsequently removed to its present location.

We undertook to find the spring, and on the way a young man came to us and showed us the spring, near a large beech tree, and the site of the old house near by. The spring is near a branch called Buzzard Roost, and it flows into the Opequon creek, a branch of the Potomac.

There is no question of the tradition, and it is said that the family has always believed that president Jackson is the same person that was born near said spring.

The facts and circumstances are so well authenticated that there can be no question thereof that one Andrew Jackson was born there and that he was taken into Carolina, and everything connected with the history tends to prove that the birthplace of the President was as we have stated.

We also give the following, furnished by General W. P. Craighill, of Charles Town, W. Va., which makes it almost conclusive, as we have concluded:

Colonel Braxton Davenport, of Jefferson county, in a letter to the Governor of Virginia, claims that General Andrew Jackson was born in Berkeley county, Va., on the estate of James Strode. The following is his statement:

"I claim his birth for Virginia, on the declaration of the late Mrs. Shepherd, the relict of the late Captain Abraham Shepherd, and Mrs. Bedinger, the wife of the late Major Henry Bedinger, of Berkeley county. These gentlemen were officers in the army of the revolution. These ladies were respectively married—Mrs. Shepherd in the early part of the revolution, and Mrs. Bedinger, a younger sister, at the conclusion of the war of 1812. The war of 1812 gave to General Jackson celebrity, and the question of nativity was started, and among those advanced in life who remained in Berkeley and Jefferson taken therefrom at that period were those ladies, from whom I learned that an Irish family named Jackson

came to their father's, the late James Strode, somewhere about the year 1760, to whom their father furnished a small tenement and gave employment; that they were then young girls; that about 1764 or 1765 a son was born to that family, whom they named Andrew; that they had two other sons older, and that being themselves without brothers they with their two older sisters sought and obtained the consent of their father and mother, when in 1768 the Jacksons were making arrangements to emigrate to the Waxhaw settlement in North Carolina to obtain from the Jacksons their youngest son, Andrew, to be raised as a brother, but were unable to do so, though they went some five miles on the road importuning—the Jacksons being poor, the Strodes having all that could be desired. It seems as if the hand of destiny was in the matter and that Andrew was a fated boy. Many years after I had received this information from those ladies—I think in 1824, early, when General Jackson was put forward by his friends for the Presidency—I met with George Johnson, a Scotchman, a very aged man, in my neighborhood who in early life, I think, was in Braddock's defeat and a soldier through the revolution, and who had resided near Mr. Strode's residence from 1760 to the revolution.

"I immediately inquired if he had ever known a family of the name of Jackson, who had resided on Mr. James Strode's estate previous to the revolution; if so, how many children they had and of what sex, and what became of the family. He replied promptly that he knew such a family; that they had three sons, the youngest of whom was called Andrew (Andy, as he called him), who was carried on the hip—that is, was not able to travel—when in 1768 they went to the Waxhaw settlement in North Carolina.

"No history or biography of Gen. Jackson had then been written, and if one had been Johnson was illiterate and had no idea of the object of my inquiry.

"The biography of Gen. Jackson (Eaton) places the arrival of the family in 1768 direct from Ireland, in the Waxhaw settlement in South Carolina, bringing the youngest son of the family, named Andrew, with them. Thus we have on good authority—mine cannot be doubted, for my informants survived until recently—two families, both Irish, who emigrated to the Waxhaw settlement and each family having their youngest son named Andrew.

"I have understood that the settlement was believed to be in North Carolina previous to the Revolution that her courts had jurisdiction over its inhabitants, it being included in one of her counties; that after the revolution the two States of South and North Carolina had the division line run, and that settlement fell into South Carolina. Could it be possible that two families from Ireland, each having three sons, the youngest one in each family bearing the name of Andrew, could arrive in the same year 1768, in same settlement?"

MAJOR GENERAL CHARLES LEE.

BY JOHN D. SUTTON.

An hour and a half's drive from Martinsburg, W. Va., on a smooth limestone turnpike in the great historic Shenandoah Valley, will bring you to Leetown. This village derived its name from its founder, General Charles Lee, who lived there. He came to America in 1773 and purchased an estate of Jacob Hite and Francis, his wife, whose deed bears date the 13th of November, 1775, and conveys 2,752 acres on several tracts in consideration of four thousand five hundred and four pounds lawful money of Virginia. The land is described as "lying on Hopewell, an eastern drain of the Opequon, one of the lines running with Bullskin path near Big Spring." Alexander White, Esq., was given a power of attorney to manage the estate, pay the purchase money and attend to all matters pertaining to General Lee's affairs.

On this property he built a stone house for a residence, situated on the Smithfield pike, leading from Shepherdstown to Winchester, and is about twelve miles from Shepherdstown and two miles east of the Opequon river, and the town contains several dwellings, two stores, three churches, a school house, blacksmith shop, wagon shop and merchant mill, and through which the Hopewell branch makes its way to the Opequon.

The residence of General Lee is built of rough limestone and lime mortar, such as is commonly used. It is an oblong, one and one-half story high, about fifty feet long by twenty wide. It was built in two parts, and most likely at different times, with walls about sixteen inches thick; the windows are irregular and vary in

size and not on a level with each other. The casings were once of heavy oak, evidently hewn by hand, but have been worn into shreds hardly sufficient to hold the windows in place. He occupied the lower, or right hand part, of the building, which was a large room without partitions but laid off by chalk marks into different apartments, one of which was assigned to his dogs, of which he was very fond, and he named them to show his irreverance after the Trinity, Father, Son and Holy Ghost.

RESIDENCE OF MAJ. GENL. CHAS. LEE.

General Lee was born in Cheshire, England, in 1731. His father was a Colonel in the British army, and his son Charles entered the service when he was eleven years old. He became a soldier of fortune, fought in Portugal, was on the staff of the King of Poland, entered the Russian army against the Turks and came to America as a lieutenant in the forty-fourth regiment of British regulars, and was with Braddock on the occasion of his defeat and death.

He was tall, lank, hollow-cheeked, with discontented expression, in dress extremely slovenly, of a restless disposition and by loud,

pompous manner and unbounded self-confidence and assertion imposed on many. He was made a major general of the Continental army, but he was dissatisfied because he was not made the commander instead of Washington.

It was doubted by many whether he had any sympathy with the American cause, and subsequent events have shown that he was willing to intrigue with the English commander to deliver the Americans into his hands. After the battle of Monmouth Washington had him court-martialed for his conduct and suspended from any command in the army.

Near the residence of General Lee was the home of General Gates, and near Martinsburg lived Gen'l Adam Stephens and near Leetown is Darkesville to commemorate General Darke, who also lived in the same county, near which lived also General Daniel Morgan. Is not this locality rich in history?

In the early days of the country, Winchester was the metropolis of the Valley, and here, just after Braddock's defeat, Fort Loudon was constructed by Washington to protect the people from the ravages of the Indians, who then were the allies of the French, and who desired to have no further progress made westward by the English, and by the Indians the settlers were made to keep in a state of defence.

At Winchester there was gathered the soldiers of Braddock's war, of Dunmore's war, and there were gatherings of men that were to be leaders in the war for Independence.

It has been said that the Register of the Taylor House in Winchester shows more officers' names of the different armies than any in the United States. Winchester was taken and retaken so frequently that the citizens never knew in the morning which side had control of them.

Lord Fairfax at one time held control of the place for his English King George, and afterwards it was held by Lord Daniel Morgan for George Washington.

General Lee purchased his estate in 1775, and he was there before the revolution but little of his time. After this war, he lived there and often met his associates, General Gates and General Stephens, to talk over the war experiences, and to twit each other with their failures.

Washington went into this vicinity at one time and thought he

would call on his Generals in this neighborhood, and sent word to Lee that he would be there on a certain day. When the day arrived, Lee was in the woods with his dogs and on the door was written in chalk: "No meat served here to-day." It was expected that Washington would say something emphatic, but he knew Lee, and he only laughed, and took his departure.

General Lee had been wounded in a duel by Colonel John Laurens on account of language used about Washington, and Washington himself had lost all respect for Lee after the battle of Monmouth, and it is no wonder that Lee did not care to meet him again.

Lee lived, while at Leetown, in his house with his dogs, with some of his neighbors he was kind, with others he was arrogant and mean.

At the time that General Lee lived at Leetown, there was plenty of game in the woods near to his home, plenty of fish in the Opequon, and he had plenty of time to indulge himself in these sports. His peculiar temperament would not permit him to remain in doors and read or write, he must be moving and roaming out doors, with his dogs, and he had his stable full of horses, and there was no end of territory over which he could ride.

There is no doubt that General Lee had his friends and admirers, his peculiar manner made some think that he was a military genius; and this was the impression he attempted to make, but he had not the judgment necessary to command an army, such as was given Washington to command, and because he could not command the army, he wished to see Washington defeated. His life, after the court martial, was not one calculated to make him happy—he became sour and morose, and apparently cared for nothing or no one.

He made his will in 1782, a copy, of which we hereto append, which tells much of the character of man he was. He was in Philadelphia, and was taken ill and died at a public house without family or friends around him.

We also append the appraisement of his personal estate, reported to Court in May, 1783.

COPY OF GENERAL CHARLES LEE'S WILL.

I, Major-General Charles Lee, of the County of Berkeley, in the Commonwealth of Virginia, being in perfect health and of sound mind, considering the certainty of death and the uncertainty of the time it may happen, have determined to make this my last will and

testament in manner following, that is to say, I give and bequeath to Alexander White, Esq., one hundred guineas, in consideration of the zeal and integrity he has displayed in the administration of my affairs; also the choice of any two of my colts and fillies under four years of age.

Item— I give, and bequeath to Charles M. Thurston, Esq., fifty guineas, in consideration of his good qualities and the friendship he has manifested for me; and to Buckner Thurston, his son, I leave all my books, as I know he will make good use of them.

To my friend, John Mercer, Esq., of Marlborough, in Virginia, I give and bequeath the choice of two brood mares, of all my swords and pistols and ten guineas to buy a ring; I would give him more, but as he has a good estate and a better genius, he has sufficient if he knows how to make good use of them.

I give and bequeath to my former Aid-de-camp, Otway Bird, the choice of another brood mare and ten guineas, for the same purpose of a remembrance ring.

I give and bequeath to my worthy friend, Colonel William Grayson, of Dumfries, the second choice of two colts, and to my excellent friend, William Steptoe, of Virginia, I would leave a great deal, but as he is so rich, it would be no less than robbing my other friends who are poor. I, therefore, entreat, that he will accept of five guineas which I bequeath to him to purchase a ring of affection.

I bequeath to my old and faithful servant, or rather humble friend, Guiseppi Minghini, three hundred guineas, with all my horses, mares and colts of every kind, those above mention excepted. Likewise all my wearing apparel and plate, my wagons and tools of agriculture, and his choice of four milch cows.

I bequeath to Elizabeth Dunn, my housekeeper, one hundred guineas and my whole stock of cattle, the four milch cows above mentioned only excepted. I had almost forgot my dear friends (and I ought to be ashamed of it), Mrs. Shippen, her son, Thomas Shippen, and Thomas Lee, Esqs., of Belleview, I beg they will accept ten guineas each to buy rings of remembrance.

My landed estate in Berkeley, I devise may be divided into three parts, according to quality and quantity. One-third I devise to my dear friend, Jacob Morres, of Philadelphia, one-third to Evan Edward, both my former Aids-de-camp, and to their heirs and assigns; and the other third part I devise to Eleazor Oswald, at present at

Philadelphia, and William Goddard, of Baltimore, to whom I am under obligations, and to their heirs and assigns, to be equally divided between them. But these devises are not to enter until they have paid off the several legacies above mentioned, with interest from the time of my death, and all taxes which may be due on my estate.

In case I should sell my said landed estate, I bequeath the price thereof, after paying the above said legacies, to the said Jacob Morres, Evan Edwards, Eleazor Oswald, and William Goddard, in the proportion above mentioned. All my slaves, which I may be possessed of at the time of my decease, I bequeath to Guiseppi Minghini and Dunn, to be equally divided between them. All my other property of every kind and in every part of the world after my decease (funeral charges and necessary expenses of administration are paid), I give, devise and bequeath to my sister, Sidney Lee, her heirs and assigns. I desire most earnestly that I may not be buried in any church or church yard, or within a mile of any Presbyterian or Annabaptist meeting house. For since I have resided in this country, I have kept so much bad company when living that I do not choose to continue it when dead. I recommend my soul to the Creator of all worlds and of all creatures, who must from his visible attributes be indifferent to their modes of worship or creeds, whether Christians, Mohammedans or Jews, whether instilled by education or taken up by reflection; whether more or less absurd, as a weak mortal can no more be answerable for his persuasions or notions or even skepticism in religion than for color of his skin.

And I do appoint the above mentioned Alexander White and Charles Minn Thurston, executors of my last will and testament, and do revoke all other wills by me heretofore made.

In witness whereof, I have hereunto set my hand and seal this — day of ————————, in the year of our Lord, one thousand, seven hundred and eighty-two (1782).

CHARLES LEE, (Seal)

Signed, sealed, published and declared by the said Major-General Charles Lee, and for his last will and testament in the presence of James Smith, Samuel Swearingen, William Goddard.

BERKELEY COUNTY, May 3th, 1783.

By virtue of an order of the County Court of Berkeley County, have appraised such of the slave and personal estate of Major-Gen-

eral Chas. Lee, deceased, as hath been produced to us by Alexander White, executor of said estate, viz:

One black mare	$ 25.00
One white horse (old)	8.00
One bay mare	10.00
One bay mare	6.00
One black mare	8.00
One bay mare (Conk'ym)	10.00
One gray horse	18.00
One black filley 3 years	3.00
One sorrel filley 3 years	12.00
One black horse 4 years	15.00
One sorrell horse 4 years	7.00
One yellow bery filley 3 years	10.00
One yellow bery horse 3 years	15.00
One large black horse 3 years	15.00
One sorrell horse 2 years	8.00
One blind black mare	6.00
26 lambs	3.18
1 negro wench Dinah	30.00
7 cows and calves	26.00
8 young cattle	16.00
8 yearling calves	6.00
1 box sheen plow clevis	
1 single trees 30-2 shovel plows	3.00
1 dun horse	12.00
1 black horse	15.00
1 sorrell mare	20.00
1 bay mare with uttor	8.00
1 bay mare	10.00
1 dun mare	15.00
1 bay horse	18.00
1 bay horse 4 years	15.00
1 sorrell filley 4 years	15.00
1 bay filley 2 years	10.00
1 bay horse 4 years	12.00
1 black horse 3 years	12.00
1 black filley 3 years	12.00
1 bay horse 3 years	10.00

4 yearlings	24.00
52 sheep	26.00
1 negro wench Sidney	50.00
1 negro fellow Jack	35.00
14 dry cows and steers	42.00
18 dry cows and steers	22.00
3 shovel plows	1.50
1 old wagon and gears	8.00
2 hoes, 1 shovel .10	.10
6 table spoons	5.80
6 spoon forks	4.10
11 teaspoons, 33, steel swork mounter 6 cents	9.30
Red cotton furniture for a bed	5.60
1 bed and 2 blankets .72, 29 hogs and 13 pigs at 15.	18.12
	700.70

Certified under our hands this 3rd day of May, 1783.

JAMES MOUSE,
JAMES WILSON,
RICHARD RANSOM,
JOHN STRODE.

At a court continued and held for Berkeley County, the 21st day of May, 1783, this Inventory and Appraisement of the estate of Major-General Charles Lee, deceased, was returned and ordered to be recorded.

Teste: WILL DREW,
Examined. *Clerk.*

KENTUCKY'S PART IN THE BATTLE OF POINT PLEASANT.

The settlement of Kentucky was greatly favored by the decisive victory over the Indians in what was thought by some, to be one of the most important battles in American history; that fought at the junction of the Kanawha and Ohio rivers on the 10th of October, 1774. It possesses peculiar interest to Kentuckians by reason of the fact that so many of the men who were engaged in the battle after-

wards became prominent in the struggle made by the white men to maintain their existence in the Kentucky wilderness, whither they had gone despite savage wrath and savage warning, to found west of the Alleghanies a home for themselves and their posterity.

At this time there was but a small number of men who had placed themselves in settlements, that were intended to be permanent within the bounds of what is now the Commonwealth of Kentucky. There may have been an equal number doing the endless exploring and surveying work which preceded a choice for the site of their future homes.

The process of survey was of the rudest kind, but it served the purpose of momentary definition of areas, made it possible to deal with land as a commodity, and left the tribulations concerning boundaries to the next generation.

The present State of Kentucky was, previous to December 31, 1776, a portion of the county of Fincastle, Virginia. By an act of the Virginia Legislature, Fincastle was, at that time divided into three counties, of which one was called Kentucky, and embraced "all that part thereof which lies to the south and westward of a line beginning on the Ohio river, at the mouth of the Great Sandy creek, and running up the same and the main or north-easterly branch thereof, to the Laurel ridge, or Cumberland mountains: thence south-westerly along the said mountains to the line of North Carolina."

This area is three hundred miles in length from east to west, and one hundred and fifty miles in mean breadth; and contains 42,600 square miles, or about twenty-seven million acres. Two great river mains, first the Ohio—which Mrs. Stowe said was "dry one-half of the year, and frozen the other half"—and afterwards the Mississippi, receive from this territorial surface the waters of the Big Sandy, Licking, Kentucky, Salt, Green, Cumberland and Tennessee rivers, and bear them through their channels over a thousand miles away to the Gulf.

The rugged mountains in the east and south-east, gradually subside westward into hills and knobs, and these slope down into the more level lands and plains of western Kentucky. The average elevation above the sea level is near three hundred feet. From the highest points of the east there is a steady decline of altitude, to the lowest valleys in the extreme west, of over thirteen hundred feet.

The many mounds, relics and earth-works scattered over the valleys, give evidence that the race of Mound Builders once occupied the land. Many of these mounds have been opened and found to contain bones of human beings, implements of stone, flint, arrowheads and pieces of pottery also beautiful things in copper, stone and shell. Until recently historians believed that these remains indicated a people different from, and more civilized than, the Indians; but modern scientists have concluded that the Mound Builders were simply the ancestors of the present Indians. Major J. W. Powell says:

"No fragment of evidence remains to support the figment of theory that there was an ancient race of Mound Builders superior in culture to the North American Indians. Pre-Columbian culture was indigenous; it began at the lowest stage of savagery and developed to the highest, and was in many places passing into barbarism, when the good queen sold her jewels. The majority of American archaeologists now sees no sufficient reason for supposing that any mysterious, superior race has ever lived in any portion of our continent."

Relics of the race are still occasionally unearthed. A clipping dated April 1st, 1902, gives the following:

"James Maley, living near Lewisburg, while plowing, unearthed a valuable relic of the Mound Builders in the shape of a large stone pipe. The bowl is four inches long and the stem six and three quarters, all being in one piece and of odd design. It is of highly polished black stone, and shows the work of a skilled artisan."

The history of Kentucky begins like a romance, thrilling in tales of heroic deeds and exciting adventures. From the earliest settlement of the State, all through the crises in its own life and the life of the nation, she has held an honorable position, and has produced men of great and noble character. None but the brave dared or desired to risk the perils of the wilderness therefore, Kentucky was founded by men of forceful qualities, remarkable as well for strength of mind as endurance of body.

For the most part, the pioneers were from that unsurpassed race of people, the Scotch-Irish, who settled in the valley of Virginia, and then spread out into the neighboring States. The early Scotch-Irish were a brave but hot-headed race. Justin Winsor describes them as having "all that excitable character which goes with a

keen-minded adherence to original sin, total depravity, predestination and election," and as seeing "no use for an Indian but to be a target for their bullets."

The Scotch-Irish being by tradition and habit a border people, pushed to the extreme western fringe of settlement. They were not over solicitous about the quality of the soil. When Arthur Lee, of Virginia, was telling Dr. Samuel Johnson of a colony of Scotch who had settled upon a particularly sterile tract in Western Virginia, and had expressed his wonder that they should do so, Johnson replied:

"Why, sir, all barrenness is comparative; the Scotch will never know it is barren."

So it was that these people became our frontiersmen. Immediately they began to clash with the Indians, and there followed a long series of border wars, waged with extreme ferocity, in which it was sometimes hard to say which race was most to blame. One thing however is certain: if any race was ordained to exterminate the Indians that race was the Scotch-Irish.

Boone was not, as many believe, the first white man to enter Kentucky. About the year 1738, a German from Western Virginia, John Peter Salling was captured by Indians and carried through Kentucky and Illinois to Kakaskia. He returned to become one of the founders of a new commonwealth. Dr. Thomas Walker and companions from Virginia explored a part of Kentucky in 1750. One year later Christopher Gist made a more thorough exploration of this region. Two years after Boone entered Kentucky two hunters from Pittsburg came as far south as where Nashville now stands. They were James Harrod, who on June 16th, 1774, made the first settlement in Kentucky, and Michael Steiner, a Pennsylvania Dutchman, who soon became famous in frontier annals, as a scout and Indian fighter. Another great scout, Kasper Mansker, came with the Long hunters to Kentucky in 1769. As an Indian fighter he soon won laurels second only to those of Simon Kenton. Boone first visited Kentucky on a hunting expedition in 1769, accompanied by a few of his neighbors from Carolina. After enjoying six months of incomparable hunting, they were scattered by Indians, Boone and his brother alone remaining. After a year of this life the brother started home to procure supplies, and Boone spent the next three months alone in the wilderness, with neither salt, sugar nor flour,

and without daring to light a camp fire at night. In 1773, acting as agent of the land speculator, Henderson, he attempted to found a colony, but his party was routed by the Indians, and his eldest son killed.

Two interesting characters of this period were Hancock Taylor and John Floyd. They were deputies under Col. Wm. Preston. These men started forth in the high hopes of their young manhood to survey the far-famed lands of Kentucky. The one was shot down by Indians a few months after his arrival; the other lived nine years —long enough to establish his family in Kentucky, and to aid in founding the new country—and then he fell a victim to the same death. Capt. Thos. Bullitt, of Virginia, at the head of a party, in 1773, made surveys of land for Dr. John Connolly, at the falls of the Ohio, where the city of Louisville now stands. Close upon his explorations came those of James Douglas, who visited Big Bone Lick, where he found scattered on the ground bones of the Mastodon, whose huge ribs he used for his tent poles. John Todd and his brother Levi came to Kentucky in the same capacity, as did also two representatives of the Lee family of Virginia. The same year there came also a party of hunters and surveyors, led by three brothers, James, George, and Robert McAfee, who later became prominent in the new country. About this time Simon Kenton roamed through Kentucky. The following year James Harrod and forty men built themselves cabins, and laid off the town of Harrodsburg, which they were soon obliged to abandon. Shortly afterward Governor Dunmore sent Daniel Boone and Michael Stoner to guide out of the wilderness these surveyors and hunters. The Shawnee Indians had become so hostile to the settlement of Kentucky that it was dangerous for any white man to remain there.

It was notable that these surveying and hunting parties found Indians often, but no Indian villages. The great tribal wars had driven the Indians north of the Ohio, and had left the country to become the common hunting ground of the tribes from the north and from the Tennessee valley on the south. Throughout the vast region there could not, until 1769, be found a single habitation, not a solitary hut of the white settler, nor a smoky wigwam of a roving Cherokee. The Indians themselves could not occupy it, for it had been for ages the common battle ground of opposing tribes—any savage met within its confines was sure to be upon the war path

against any and all comers. Kentucky was indeed the "dark and bloody ground," and he who entered took his life in his hand, be he white or red.

It is impossible to secure a complete list of the Kentuckians who assisted the Virginians at the battle of Point Pleasant, or of those Virginians who were at that battle and afterwards came to Kentucky. Some of the number in after years found themselves famous: of some we have only the names; of some we lose all trace and story. Their work was done in the silence of the wilderness, and if for a moment they emerged into the view of men to strike a vital blow for their country they vanished as quickly as they came into the solitudes of the far off forests. But they were patriots and heroes.

Isaac Shelby, who turned the trembling scale at the close of the terrible day at Point Pleasant, was born near Hagerstown, Maryland, where his grand-father and father settled after their arrival in America from Wales. When a youth he removed to Western Virginia, and was there engaged in feeding herds of cattle. He served as Lieutenant, under his father, Captain (afterwards General) Evan Shelby, in the battle of Point Pleasant. In the revolutionary war he was noted for his gallantry and skill with which he harrassed and baffled the British in many campaigns.

At Camden and Kings Mountain his genius and energy did much to win the victories which drove the invading enemy from that section.

He moved to Kentucky in 1783, and at once took an active interest in the civil, military and social condition of the country. He reached the highest position in office of the State, as he had won the highest esteem and confidence of the people. He was the first Governor of the young State, and in 1812, he was re-elected by the people.

In April, 1783, Colonel Shelby married Susannah, second daughter of Captain Nathaniel Hart. "He established himself on the first settlement and pre-emption granted in Kentucky, for the purpose of pursuing his favorite occupation, the cultivation of the soil: and it is a remarkable fact, that at the time of his death, forty-three years after, he was the only individual in the State residing upon his own settlement and pre-emption."

He suffered for years with a paralytic affection that disabled his

right arm, and caused some lameness of the right leg. He died of apoplexy, July 18th, 1826, in the seventy-sixth year of his age. He was a true blue Presbyterian, and had a church built upon his own land.

The McDowell family in its various branches and connections is one of the most distinguished in Virginia and Kentucky. Judge Samuel McDowell, who was Captain of a company from Augusta County, at Point Pleasant, was the eldest son of Jno. McDowell, of Rockbridge county. He, with his wife—Mary McClung—seven sons and two daughters, emigrated to Danville in 1784.

He was one of the judges of the first Kentucky court, and president of nine conventions which met at Danville between 1784 and 1790; and also of the convention which framed the first constitution of Kentucky. His sixth son and two of his brother John's children married two daughters and a son of Governor Isaac Shelby. While other children and grand-children inter-married with the well-known families Adair, Allen, Buford, Christman, Heckman, Lyle, Pogue, Pickett, McAfee and Woodson.

Silas Harlan, one of Harrod's company, was from Berkeley county, Virginia. He came to Kentucky in 1774, and took an active part in the battles and skirmishes with the Indians. He commanded a company of spies under General Geo. Rogers Clark, in the Illinois campaigns in 1779. General Clark said of him, that he was one of the bravest and most accomplished soldiers that ever fought by his side." He was a Major at the battle of Blue Licks and was one of the sixty who fell in that contest. He was about thirty years of age and was never married. He was universally regarded as a brave, generous and efficient man.

The name of Azariah Davis is among the members of Harrod's company. He was one of the first Legislature assembled at Boonesborough, and is also named as one of those who were in Harrodsburg in 1775, after March 11th, which is the date of the occupancy of the cabins built in 1774.

Colonel Wm. Chirstian, in whose honor Christian county was named, was a native of Augusta county, Virginia. In 1774, having received the appointment of Colonel of Militia, he raised about three hundred volunteers with the intention of joining the forces of General Lewis at Point Pleasant. He did not arrive in time to take part in the battle, which occurred on the preceding day.

He was educated at Staunton, and when very young commanded a company, which was ordered to the frontier during Braddock's war. Upon the termination of Indian hostilities, he married a sister of Patrick Henry and settled in Botetourt county. In 1775 he came to Kentucky; in April of the succeeding year, while pursuing a party of Indians, who had stolen a number of horses. Colonel Christian and one of his party were killed. He was brave, intelligent and remarkably popular.

Abraham Chapline was with Harrod in May, 1774. He and one of his men discovered Chaplaine's fork of Salt river, which yet bears his name. In 1775 he was at Harrodsburg.

Colonel Geo. Slaughter was the son-in-law of Colonel Fields and was in his regiment at Point Pleasant. He was one of eight appointed to lay off the town of Louisville.

When only eighteen, James Trimble was a soldier in the battle at Point Pleasant. He was from Augusta county, Virginia. His grand-father was killed and he made a prisoner by the Indians in 1770. In 1780 or '81 he emigrated to what is now Woodford county, Kentucky, and was one of the first permanent settlers. In 1804, when about to remove to Hillsborough, Ohio, he died. His family moved to that place and his sons became prominent and honored men. Allen Trimble being Governor while Wm. A. was a Major in the war of 1812, Lieutenant Colonel in the regular army in 1819 —and a member of the United States Senate.

At the battle of Point Pleasant, Wm. Russell—afterwards Colonel —was only fifteen years of age. He was born in Culpepper county, Virginia, and died in Fayette county, Kentucky, in 1825. He was Lieutenant at the battle of King's Mountain and Guilford Court House, and came to Fayette county soon after the close of the revolutionary war. President Madison appointed him to the command of a regiment in the regular army. When peace was restored he retired to his farm. He was almost continuously a servant of the people. In 1789 he was elected delegate to the Virginia Legislature, which passed the act separating the district of Kentucky from the parent State. He represented Fayette county in the first Legislature of Kentucky in 1792, and again at different times until 1823, thirteen session in all. In 1825 he was called from his sick room to preside over a public meeting; the exposure increased his illness and in a few weeks death ensued.

Two brothers, Jacob and James Sandusky, were connected with Harrod's settlement. Upon the breaking up of that settlement in 1774, Jacob traveled to the Cumberland river, and in a canoe descended the Cumberland, Ohio and Mississippi rivers to New Orleans; from thence he went around to Virginia by way of Baltimore. Returning soon to Kentucky, he settled at Sandusky's Station.

James Sandusky first came to Kentucky with Harrod, Hite and others in May, 1774. He was with the party of surveyors, when Governor Dunmore sent Boone and Stoner to warn them of Indian hostilities. Jacob died in Jessamine and James in Bourbon county.

Another picturesque figure is that of Simon Kenton, famous as an Indian scout and the hero of many startling adventures. He was born in Fauquier county, Virginia. His father was an Irishman; his mother of Scotch descent. His manhood began with a tragedy. He loved a girl who was won by a friend. He fought a duel with his rival, and believing he had killed him, fled from his old home in Virginia, and under an assumed name, Simon Butler, tried to forget his deed. For eleven years he wandered in the wilderness, filled with remorse for his rash, though unpremeditated crime, the brand of murder upon his heart, if not upon his brow.

In the fall of 1782, he returned to Virginia to bring his family to Kentucky, he then learned that he had not killed his old playmate and friend. Kenton was Simon Butler now no longer, and felt like a new man. Once he was captured by the Indians; eight times he was made to run the gauntlet; three times he was tied to the stake to be burned alive, and every time he was saved through some unexpected deliverance.

Kenton spent the winter of 1773 on the Big Sandy with a hunting party. When Governor Dunmore raised an army to punish the Indians, Kenton volunteered and was actively employed as a spy. He was with Geo. Rogers Clark at Kaskaskia. He removed to Ohio in 1779, settling in Urbana. He was elected Brigadier General of the Ohio Militia in 1805. In 1813 the gallant old man joined the Kentucky troops under Governor Shelby and was in the battle of the Thames. This was his last battle. In 1820 he moved from Urbana to the site on the Scioto river, where the Indians had tied him to a stake to be burned. This was his last home, and here he died on the 29th of April, 1836, at the age of eighty-one years.

Captain James Montgomery was in Colonel Clendenin's regiment.

James Knox was a leader of the party of Long hunters in southern, middle Kentucky. He was in Issac Hite's company, and afterwards settled in Kentucky.

From "an account current of provisions purchased by Jas. Lindsay for the use of the garrison at Harrodsburg from December 16th, 1777, to October 16th, 1778, we gather the names of some of Harrod's and Hite's companies. James McCulloch, John Shelp, Wm. Fields, Thomas Glenn, David Williams, James Brown, John Cowan, John Wilson, Abraham Chapline of Harrod's company, were again at Harrodsburg in 1775. Others of Harrod's company were: John Clark, one of the volunteer dragoons, under command of Captain Wm. Garrard, who died in the service November 15th, 1812.

John Crawford, who represented Montgomery county in 1812, and John Crow, who settled in Lincoln county.

Wm. Bracken was with Kenton in Kenton county in 1775.

Thos. Posey was born on the banks of the Potomac, in Virginia, July 9th, 1750. At the age of nineteen he was induced by an enterprising spirit to remove to the western part of the State. He resided on the frontier but a few years when he received an appointment in the Quartermaster's department and marched with General Lewis' division against the Indians.

In 1775 he was elected a member of a committee of correspondence, and thus at the early age of twenty-five he became enrolled in the ranks of patriotism, and occupied a responsible station, which showed that his capacity and discretion were such as to have won the confidence of his countrymen. Soon after this he was appointed as Captain in the regular service, and during the whole of the revolutionary war, was actively and efficiently engaged in most perilous and difficult service, under commanders of highest reputation. He left the army with the rank of Colonel.

On quitting the regular service, Colonel Posey settled in Kentucky, where his military reputation recommended him to new honors, and he was almost immediately elected to the Senate, and was called to the station of Speaker of that body, in which office he served for four years.

He was for many years a consistent member of the Presbyterian church. He died March 19th, 1818, in Shawneetown, Illinois.

Jas. Harrod was the leader of the first settlers at Harrodsburg

and was rendered conspicuous as the builder of the first cabin in Kentucky, in the spring or summer of 1774. He had been in Kentucky as early as 1767 with Michael Stoner.

We find him on the 10th of October with Colonel Lewis at Point Pleasant, giving by a decisive victory over the north-western tribes of savages, a death blow to their supremacy. On the return of spring, he and his party of the year before came again to their cabin settlement at Harrodsburg. Possessing qualities of a high and generous nature, inured to the life of a backwoodsman, familiar with its dangers, and capable of enduring its hardships, he was singularly adapted to the position which he occupied. He was a member of the first Legislature. January 2nd, 1777, he raised a company of about thirty men to go for the powder which Geo. Rogers Clark had procured for the relief of the settlers in Kentucky, and had secreted at Three Islands, near Manchester, Ohio. He was appointed Major of the first Regimental Militia, but having previously held a higher grade, he refused the new commission.

Harrod was murdered by a man named Bridges, with whom he had a law suit about property. The exact date of his death is not known, but it was probably in July, 1793.

Fleming county was named for Colonel Wm. Fleming, who at the battle of Point Pleasant commanded a company from Botetourt, Bedford and Fincastle. He was a Scotchman, a physician and a man of considerable learning. At one time a member of the House of Burgesses; in 1781, while a member of the Council, he was for a time acting Governor of Virginia. In 1785, he removed to Kentucky, and took quite a prominent part in the affairs of the State.

Colonel Joseph Crockett, from Albemarle county, was Lieutenant in General Wm. Russell's company at Point Pleasant. For services in the Battle of Monmouth he was promoted to the rank of Lieutenant Colonel. He spent the winter with Washington at Valley Forge, and was second in command to General Clark in the campaign against the Northwestern Indians. He moved to Jessamine county, Kentucky, in 1784. President Jefferson appointed Colonel Crockett United States Marshal for the District of Kentucky, which office he held for eight years, and while in office he arrested Aaron Burr in 1806.

" He died in 1829 and is buried in Jessamine county on the farm

which he received from the State of Virginia for his services at Point Pleasant and in the Revolutionary Army."

LOUELLA KEMPER POAGE.

Ashland, Kentucky.

THOMAS SHEPHERD.

Tradition says that Thomas Shepherd came to America with his brothers, David and John, from Shropshire, England, in the early part of the eighteenth century, landing at Annapolis, Md. How

STREET IN SHEPHERDTOWN WITH OLD HOUSE IN STREET.

long they stayed there is not known; but in 1734 Thomas Shepherd bought two thousand acres of land on the south side of the Potomac river from Jost Hite, and on June 12, 1751, he added 450 acres, and on January 15, 1768, 222 acres, by grants from "the Right Honorable Lord Fairfax," which two grants are recorded in the land office in Richmond, Va. In addition to all this, he seems to have acquired from one Richard Morgan a tract of 50 acres, for several old leases are in existence subdividing this land and referring to

it as follows: " * * which said piece, parcel, or tract of land is part of fifty acres of land conveyed to the said Thomas Shepherd by Captain Richard Morgan, bearing date the fifth day of August, one thousand, seven and sixty-two." This antedates the second deed from Lord Fairfax by six years.

OLD ENGLISH CHURCH.

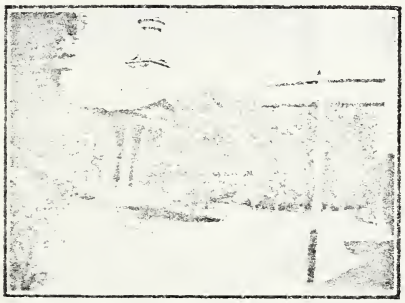
In this same year, 1762, an act was passed incorporating a town which Thomas Shepherd had laid off on his land. It was first called Mecklenburg, but after his death the name was changed to Shepherdstown, in honor of its founder.

RECTORY.

As to the people whom Thomas Shepherd found already living on the land which he bought and afterward had incorporated, nothing

authentic is known, but an old paper in the possession of the writer gives the terms upon which Thomas Shepherd sold the lots in the town. This quaint old paper says:

"The said Thomas Shepherd executed an article in writing wherein he covenanted and agreed with the subscribers thereto to lay off twenty lots, half an acre in each lot; to let each subscriber have one lot during the continuance of the Indian war free and clear from rent or any incumbrance; and at the end of the then Indian war each subscriber should pay fourty shillings current money of Virginia; and on the payment of the said fourty shillings each subscriber, his heirs or assigns, should receive a sufficient title for his lot, subject to a yearly rent after the then Indian war, of five shillings sterling, and for making the said titles and complying with the covenants and agreements above mentioned the said



SHEPHERD COLLEGE.

Thomas Shepherd bound himself, his heirs, executors and administrators in the penal sum of one thousand pounds like current money of Virginia, to be paid to the subscribers in his non-performance." A descendant of Thomas Shepherd still owns one of these half acre lots.

Through the center of the town ran a small stream, the power of which was utilized to run a grist mill and saw mill, built by this clear-headed man, who had evidently come to the wilderness with not only courage and wisdom, but some capital to back his enterprise.

He had married Elizabeth Van Meter, a daughter of John Van Meter and sister of Jost Hite's wife, but when and where this marriage took place I have not been able to find out. The Van Meters

were among the early Dutch settlers of New Jersey. A very interesting account of this family was published in the WEST VIRGINIA HISTORICAL MAGAZINE for April, 1902, in which mention is made of this marriage.

Thomas Shepherd built in the center of the town of Mecklenburg a stone house, which was intended for a defense against the Indians as well as for a dwelling for his family. It was known as "The Fort," and the neighboring families collected there in time of danger. This was left by will to his son Abraham, with the proviso that his "beloved spouse" should have the use of it during her life. "The Fort" remained as it was built until about 1812, when it was torn down and a building of brick erected in its place, the

ENTRANCE TO SHEPHERD CEMETERY.

stones being used for a wall around the lot. Shepherd College, the State Normal School, now has taken the place of the old stone fort, a descendant of Thomas Shepherd to whom it came by inheritance having presented it for this purpose. A stone wall still surrounds the lot with doubtless some of the same stone in it that had formed the walls of Thomas Shepherd's old home.

Seven years after the town was incorporated an Episcopal church was erected (a small building of stone), chiefly by Thomas Shepherd, and the date of its erection was cut in a stone over the door, "1769." In his will he says: "It is my desire that the lot in

Mecklenburg on which the English church stands, known by Lot No. 40, be the sole use of the Parish of Norborne, free from ground rents, and my heirs give a deed for it to the vestry if required."

This old church was twice replaced with larger buildings, and the present structure, of which a picture is given, was built in 1842, chiefly through the self-denying efforts of Mrs. Eleanor Strode Shepherd, widow of Thomas Shepherd's son Abraham, a most devoted churchwoman, although born in the Society of Friends. In 1858 a fourth Episcopal church was built in another location, a beautiful structure of limestone, and the old church is now used as a place of worship by the colored Methodist congregation.

Thomas Shepherd and Elizabeth Van Meter, his wife, had ten children—William, Thomas, John, Abraham, David, Susannah,

SHEPHERD CEMETERY.

Mary, Martha, Sarah and Elizabeth. Of his sons, Abraham married Eleanor Strode and had seven children—Rezin Davis Abraham, James Hervey, Henry, Anne, Eliza and Charles Moses; David married Rachel Teague, and was the father of five children; William married and had three children, mentioned in Thomas Shepherd's will by name—William, Thomas and Sarah, but whom he married is not known, nor do I know anything of the families of Thomas and John. Of Thomas Shepherd's daughters, Susannah married a Mr. Eoffe, who afterwards become one of the leading lawyers of Wheeling; Martha married a Mr. McDowell; Sarah, a Mr. Thornburg, and her son, Thomas Thornburg, is mentioned in Thomas Shepherd's will; Mary married a Mr. Fay, and Elizabeth married a Mr. Brown.

Thomas Shepherd died in 1776, and was buried in about the center of the lot which he had reserved for a graveyard for himself and his descendants, and which is still used as such. Time has, however, obliterated all trace of his grave and that of Elizabeth, his wife. But Shepherdstown is in itself a monument to him. Go where you will the world over you will find some one who knows this modest little town on the south bank of the Potomac; for since the days of the revolutionary war, when Thomas Shepherd's son, Captain Abraham Shepherd, marched with his company (all of them pioneer citizens from the right bank of the Potomac) to the relief of Boston, to the present day, when her sons are to be found in the foremost ranks of the world's workers, upon this tiny mother has been reflected the glory of her stalwart sons, and Thomas Shepherd builded better than he knew when he founded the town of Mecklenburg.

FANNY SHEPHERD ALLEN.

WILLIAM HENRY RUFFNER, LL. D.

BY HIS DAUGHTER, ANNE H. R. BARCLAY.

Dr. William Henry Ruffner, who has been writing a series of sketches of the Ruffners for the WEST VIRGINIA HISTORICAL MAGAZINE, was 78 years old the 11th of last February, and is far more vigorous than most men of his age. He lives at his country home, "Tribrook," two miles south of Lexington, Va., drives himself four or five miles every day, takes walks about his fields, and indulges a little in his favorite recreation of guiding water from his irrigating ditches to thirsty spots in the meadows. He reads a good deal, keeps up with current events, and is especially interested in scientific, educational and religious news.

For a few years past he has spent much time on local history, which includes genealogies and reminiscences. He has insisted for some time that his writing days are over, as both hands are nearly worn out by much writing in the past, and his eyes give him some trouble; but last winter he was besieged with requests for articles—especially while the educational provisions were being discussed in the Constitutional Convention—and he wrote more or less each day for months.

The picture given in connection with this article was taken Christmas week, 1899. The likeness is excellent. Dr. Ruffner is six feet tall and weighs over 200 pounds; his hair is nearly white, his eyes are blue, his complexion dark. His whole appearance is impressive. He is full of anecdotes and reminiscences of his contemporaries and of the generation that preceded them, and he loves to talk of the old times.

DR. W. H. RUFFNER.

Dr. Ruffner is the eldest son of Dr. Henry Ruffner, President of Washington College—now Washington and Lee University—recently sketched in your magazine. His mother was Miss Sarah Lyle, daughter of Captain William Lyle [see Washington and Lee Historical Papers], of "Oakley," four miles north of Lexington, a gifted woman, possessing beauty, great charm of manner and fine conversational powers. Dr. Ruffner's only brother, Captain David L. Ruffner, made Charleston his home for many years.

William Henry Ruffner was born in Lexington, Rockbridge county, Va., February 11, 1824, and during his boyhood and college days lived on the college campus. From early childhood he was taken every year to visit his grandfather, Colonel David Ruffner, who lived at Kanawha Salines. At first these trips to Kanawha were made in the family carriage; afterward in the stage coach; in recent years by the C. & O. railroad. He has many pleasant recollections of these journeys and of the dear grandparents who gave the children such a welcome and such a royally good time during their entire stay. And what delicious things they had to eat! Could any place but Kanawha grow such peaches, such grapes, such melons and chestnuts? The Kanawha river was the largest he had ever seen up that time, and fishing and swimming were unending sources of pleasure.

In 1842 W. H. Ruffner took the degree of A. B. at Washington College, and at the commencement delivered an oration on "The Power of Knowledge." James L. Kemper, who graduated at the same time, spoke on "The Importance of Having a Public Free School System in Virginia." Years afterward these two boys—Kemper, Governor of Virginia, Ruffner, Superintendent Public Instruction—had offices on the same floor in the Capitol in Richmond, and sat together on the Board of Education, they two constituting two-thirds of that body.

In 1843 Ruffner continued his studies as resident graduate, and in 1845 received from the board of trustees the degree of A. M. On this occasion he was chosen to deliver the Master's Oration, and selected "War" for his subject. He spoke of the horrors of war and the feasibility of settling all international disputes by means of a congress of nations. It has taken civilized nations fifty years to appreciate his views on arbitration—the practical realization has now begun.

About this time salt making was in its glory, and W. H. Ruffner went to Kanawha in June, 1843, to engage temporarily in the salt business. His father owned the lot on which was situated the original salt springs. His furnaces had been idle for years on a dead-rent. Wm. Henry deepened the original boring, built a new furnace and made salt until the latter part of 1844, when he sold the property. During this time he was also very active in church and temperance work.

In 1845 he came to Lexington and remained until about October. Here he sang in the choir of the Presbyterian church, trained a singing class, organized and (assisted by Tucker Lacy, afterwards D. D.) carried on the first colored Sunday school in Lexington with upwards of 100 pupils and plenty of white teachers.

In the autumn of 1845 he was a student in Union Theological Seminary, then situated at Hampden-Sidney, Va., and the next session attended the Theological Seminary at Princeton, N. J.

In the spring of 1847 his health failed to such an extent that his friends thought he could not live. He returned to Virginia, where gentle exercise, fresh air and perfect quiet had wonderful effect on his health, so that in 1848 he was licensed to preach by New Brunswick Presbytery at Princeton. On account of the desire to be near his mother, whose health was declining rapidly, he engaged in the work of colporter in the mountains surrounding Lexington. After she died, in January, 1849, he preached several months at Charlotte Court House, and in September became chaplain of the University of Virginia. Here in addition to his ministerial work he attended Dr. William H. McGuffey's Moral Philosophy lectures regularly, and the lectures of other professors occasionally, and organized and carried out the scheme for a series of lectures by distinguished Presbyterian ministers on the Evidences of Christianity. He wrote outline sketches of these lectures weekly to the Central Presbyterian and published them also in the Jefferson Monument Magazine, and later arranged the lectures with comprehensive preface in book form. This volume had a large sale and repaid all expenses.

On September 3, 1850, he married Harriet A. Gray, daughter of the able Rockingham lawyer, Robert Gray, and took her to the University. In September, 1851, he became pastor of the Seventh Presbyterian church, Penn square, Philadelphia, which seated 1,200 people, but was very much run down and had a heavy debt resting upon it. During his short pastorate the congregation more than doubled and the debt was considerably reduced.

The church people were most appreciative, and when in March, 1853, Mr. Ruffner found himself in such failing health as to feel obliged to resign, they protested against it and offered to continue his salary and grant him leave of absence for a year. But he declined their generous offer, for he thought the condition of his throat and general health was such as to prevent his ever being

equal to a city charge. While in Philadelphia Mr. Ruffner worked far too hard, not only in preparing three sermons a week and in doing a large amount of pastoral visiting, but in taking part in the "New Themes" controversy, for which he wrote one book, "Charity and the Clergy," in delivering a series of lectures on "The Relations Between Science and the Bible," in taking a very active part as a member of the board of directors of the African Colonization Society, etc.

In the spring of 1853, W. H. Ruffner went to reside near Harrisonburg, Rockingham county, Va., where his principal occupation was farming. Sick as he was, he superintended the Sunday school, preached now and then, and led a movement in building the present church.

Mr. Ruffner was a strong anti-slavery Union man until Lincoln's proclamation calling for Virginia troops; but when war came his sympathies were with his own State and people. The condition of his health prevented active service in the army, but he did what he could for the Southern cause, giving liberally, feeding hundreds of soldiers as they passed and repassed his home, sending food and clothing to the hospitals, etc.

In 1863 Mr. Ruffner moved back to his old home, Lexington, Va., to live. His preaching days were nearly over. For a time he acted as substitute for Dr. Ebenezer Junkin at *New Providence; preached occasionally at *Timber Ridge, and became stated supply of *Ben Salem for several years. In 1874 Dr. Ruffner, feeling sure that he would never again (on account of throat trouble, etc.) be able to perform the active duties of the ministry, requested Lexington Presbytery to demit him from the sacred office, which it did without censure.

SUPERINTENDENT OF PUBLIC INSTRUCTION.

The late Constitution of Virginia was adopted in 1869. Among the offices to be filled was that of Superintendent of Public Instruction. Dr. Ruffner's deep interest in popular education and earnest desire that the school system should not be a failure, caused him to enter the lists against fourteen other candidates for this position. After receiving the caucus nomination he was unanimously

*Three country churches in Rockbridge county.

elected by the Conservative party votes and nearly all of the Republicans.

Within thirty days, as required by the Constitution, he produced the "*Outline Plan of Public Instruction.*" This, at the request of the Education Committee, he elaborated into a bill of forty pages, which, after much discussion by both houses, was finally signed July 11, 1870.

A large majority of the intelligent white people of Virginia were opposed to the public school system, and many of the politicians would have practically nullified it if they had dared, and many of them were every session trying to cripple it under the guise of friendship. Dr. Ruffner labored hard to change public opinion, and gradually one after another of the opponents became favorable to the system. One of his greatest difficulties was in protecting the schools from injurious legislation usually in the form of innocent looking amendments which contained deadly virus, and he thinks the most important service he rendered the school system was in protecting it from these attacks during the first ten years of its existence. This naturally made him many enemies among the politicians, who would gladly have overthrown him, but finding *that* impossible they annoyed him with many vexatious resolutions in regard to his character and conduct. The greatest glory of his administration is that he came out clean and unscathed from all these attacks.

Dr. Ruffner had also his troubles with the newspapers, many of which supported him firmly, many were disposed to be critical and a few were bitterly hostile. By the year 1875 most of the newspapers were outspoken in favor of the schools; by 1880 both newspapers and politicians saw that the school system was a fixed fact, and that it was to their interest to give it their support.

Book agents (swarms of them) constituted another of the annoyances of the Superintendent of Public Iistruction's office. They were playing for heavy stakes, and most of them were not over scrupulous. Some would stop at nothing that was likely to improve their chances of having their books adopted. Yet in the selection of school books they were very useful in showing the good points in their own publications and the weak points of their competitors.

OFFICIAL WORK.

The law at first allowed the Superintendent of Public Instruction one clerk; afterwards two. The positions were occupied by Duncan C. Lyle, A. M., Prof. L. R. Holland, R. W. Flournoy, Howe P. Cockran, James C. Southall, LL. D.—cultivated gentlemen and most faithful and efficient clerks.

The enormous amount of work done in the office is stated in detail in the Superintendent's reports.

W. H. RUFFNER'S INDIVIDUAL LABORS AS SUPERINTENDENT OF PUBLIC INSTRUCTION.

In one of Dr. Ruffner's reports he stated that in his opinion one-third of the Superintendent of Public Instruction's time should be spent in his study, one-third in his office and one-third in the field. Of course this could not be the daily division, but referred rather to the whole year. We have not space to explain the work in detail, but that W. H. Ruffner did a great deal of study work is abundantly shown by his multitudinous publications, the most of which exhibited much thought and investigation.

His office work was in answering letters (ten to twenty a day), supervising and directing all the work of the clerks, receiving innumerable visits, generally on school business, attending numerous meetings of the Board of Education, examining a world of testimonials and letters of persons applying for official appointment, etc.

The selection of text-books for schools once in four years was a very annoying and burdensome work, and so in a less degree was the disposition of the Peabody money and the management of the Congressional Land Fund for the technical schools.

We can only touch upon the Superintendent of Public Instruction's *field* work. It consisted in making public addresses on education in 94 out of the 100 counties of Virginia, in holding teachers' institutes in most of the counties, and in summer institutes and delivering lectures therewith on such subjects as the topography, geology and mineral resources of Virginia, and in giving instruction in regard to normal education, its theory and practice; in assembling county superintendents and school boards, and in giving them much official instruction; in visiting public schools; in attending to duties in connection with the Agricultural and Mechanical

College (Blacksburg) [now called Virginia Polytechnic Institute], and the Hampton Normal and Agricultural Institute, of which schools he was a trustee *ex officio;* in visiting public schools, normal schools and technical colleges in other States, extending his travels for this purpose even into Canada.

While Superintendent of Public Instruction Dr. Ruffner was editor of the official department of the Virginia School Journal, and carried on in the newspapers several spirited controversies in defense of public school education.

During his administration of twelve years, Dr. Ruffner made various endeavors, without success, to secure from the Legislature an appropriation for a normal school. In 1884, when such an appropriation was made for establishing the "State Female Normal School" at Farmville, Dr. Ruffner, at the unanimous and urgent insistance of the Board of Trustees, and at decided sacrifice of personal interests, became its principal for three years.

Miss Celestia Parrish, in "The Virginia School Journal" of June, 1889, writes:

"Under his wise, upright and efficient management the success of the school was phenomenal. The prestige of his name gave it the respect which, as an innovation, it could not otherwise have commanded: his sound educational philosophy shaped and gave tone to its professional instruction," etc.

During President Cleveland's first administration many prominent men and leading educators of both political parties and from different sections of the country desired that Dr. Ruffner should be appointed Commissioner of Education of the United States, and without his knowledge sent in to the President high testimonials as to his fitness for the position. Urged by many letters, Dr. Ruffner for a time became a candidate, but after mature reflection withdrew his application.

Space permits me to quote only one or two of the many testimonials to the value of the educational work accomplished by Dr. Ruffner. Perhaps it will be best to give the latest. In the just issued annual report of the present Superintendent of Public Instruction—Dr. J. W. Southall—he says: "The people of Virginia can never forget the illustrious services rendered to the cause of public education by Dr. Wm. H. Ruffner, the founder and organizer of their public school system and their first Superintendent of

Public Instruction. All Virginians, and especially those engaged in the noble work of education, should join in paying homage to this venerable educational statesman who, as he retires from the stage of active life, can say with the Roman Diusus, 'I *have done the State some service.*'"

Mr. E. C. Glass, Superintendent of the Lynchburg schools, and one of the best and most progressive of Virginia educators today, writes in The Richmond Times of August 31: "It is fair to say that the superiority of the Virginia school system is due mainly to the well perfected shape it assumed in the beginning under the moulding hand of Dr. W. H. Ruffner. No more perfect piece of machinery was ever turned out in so short a time, or set to going with so much ease. * * But Virginia has really had her Horace Mann. In mental force, scholarship and gifts of speech; in powers of organization, in executive ability and professional zeal, no State has ever had a chief executive school officer superior to Virginia's first Superintendent of Public Instruction. What our schools are we owe chiefly to him."

SCIENTIFIC WORK.

W. H. Ruffner will never get the credit and position he deserves as a geologist, for he has never written much in scientific journals nor joined scientific societies, nor made scientific speeches (except locally), nor done anything to bring himself into notice, though often invited and urged to do so. Yet his most decided taste from boyhood has been for natural science, especially for geology and agriculture. For thirty-five years before becoming a professional geologist he had devoted much time to the study of geology, and for love of it had done much free geological work.

In 1860 he began to run a geologic section across the State of Virginia from Hampton Roads to the Ohio river, and he ultimately finished it, although not able to work out all parts of the line with equal detail. While Superintendent of Public Instruction he delivered many speeches on local geology, and made useful collections of minerals. Immediately after leaving the Superintendent of Public Instruction's office, February 1, 1882, he was employed by General T. M. Logan and Major J. W. Johnston to make a physical survey along the projected line of the Georgia Pacific railway from Atlanta to the Mississippi river, a distance of 500 miles.

Dr. Ruffner was the first to locate correctly the place of the

Alabama coal field on the geologic scale, as shown in his published report, and as has been proved by subsequent investigations.

Most of the years 1882 and 1883 were spent in examining and reporting upon large coal and iron properties lying principally along the line of the Georgia Pacific railway. The owners of this railroad altered their staked-out line for a distance of forty miles out from Birmingham in order to follow a line about eight miles farther north, laid down by Dr. Ruffner. While Dr. Ruffner has done more geologic work in Alabama than in any State except Virginia (where he has done more than any of his contemporaries), he has examined many large properties in North and South Carolina, Georgia, Tennessee and Washington. Most of his reports on these properties were for the private use of the syndicates employing him, and have never been printed.

Dr. Ruffner gave up this lucrative work temporarily in order to organize the Virginia State Female Normal School, but returned to it in 1884. For a New York syndicate Dr. Ruffner made a trip to Washington *Territory*, starting October 19, 1887, and returning December 9. The report of this reconnoisance was published in book form. A New York company was about to build a railroad across the Rocky mountains. The President sent for Dr. Ruffner and told him they wanted him to examine and report on the whole line from the Mississippi river to some point near the Pacific coast. This offer was declined.

In the autumn of 1891 Dr. Ruffner made a second trip to the then *State* of Washington and examined properties in the Cascade Mountains for a Richmond syndicate.

Besides iron and coal properties, W. H. Ruffner has examined and reported on gold and lead mines, glass sands, fire clay, cement quarries, etc. For years he was constantly at work until June, 1894, when his family protested that a man of over 70 years of age should not enter mines or climb mountains. Only a few of Dr. Ruffner's long geologic reports have been published.

LITERARY WORK.

Dr. Ruffner has been a diligent student, especially of education, psychology, political economy, geology and scientific agriculture. His writings on these and other subjects have been voluminous, but largely in the form of newspaper and magazine articles.

"His eleven volumes" (annual reports while S. P. I.), wrote Dr. J. L. M. Curry, "are hardly surpassed in our educational literature, have often been quoted as authoritative, and were honored with a diploma from the Republic of Chili."

His controversial writings Gen. Wm. N. Pendleton likened to those of Junius: the people of his State, and particularly of his own section, have derived much profit from his agricultural writings; his suggestions in regard to the physical resources of Virginia have been acted upon in various quarters. For about ten years past he has given much time to historical and biographical writing. Two parts of the "History of Washington and Lee University" have appeared: another is ready for the press.

Various important positions were offered Dr. Ruffner. He has acted on the board of trustees of his own Alma Mater and of many other institutions, and has been on the editorial staff of several newspapers.

Sketches of him have appeared from time to time in newspapers, school journals and books. The latest was in the Virginia School Journal of May 1, 1902.

GENEALOGY OF MRS. VIRGINIA HARVIE PATRICK.

BY REV. ROBT. DOUGLAS ROLLER, D. D.

In the April number of the WEST VIRGINIA HISTORICAL MAGAZINE appeared an excellent sketch of Gabriel Jones, the first lawyer who ever practiced his profession in what is now the State of West Virginia. Some of his descendants are now living in this State. The city of Charleston claims one, most worthy in life and character, in the person of the venerable widow of that honored and esteemed practitioner of medicine the late Spicer Patrick, M. D.

Mrs. Patrick's ancestry is so distinguished in every line, and so interwoven with the rise and progress of the two Virginias and, in fact, with the whole republic, that some succinct statement must be of more than local interest.

I am aware of the modesty of this family which shrinks from public notice, but as this sketch, prepared principally by a non-resident member of the family, came into my possession in a casual, yet legitimate, way, I am sure of no offense to modesty, because we

claim that the lives of all good people are public property, in so far as they relate to the fundamental principles of good government, good society, good order and true religion.

Before each individual or family sketch, is given the lines of ascent leading to that particular excursus. This is done for the sake of perspicuity. This genealogy contains sketches relating to the following families:

Harvie,	Jacquelin,
Jones,	Cary,
Marshall,	Burwill,
Willis,	Carter,
Ambler,	Higginson,
Randolph,	

Virginia, widow of Spicer Patrick, M. D.,
daughter of
Jacquelin B. Harvie and Mary Marshall,
son of
John Harvie and Margaret Morton,
son of
John Harvie and ——— Gaines.

The Harvies are of Scotch descent, coming to Virginia from Stiolingshire, Scotland. John Harvie, son of John and ——— Gaines, was born in Albemarle county, 1742; married Margaret Morton, daughter of Gabriel Jones, and Margaret Strother. He became early in life a successful lawyer, was delegate to the House of Burgesses from West Augusta; was a member of the Convention of 1775-6; signed the Bill of Rights; member of Continental Congress, 1778-9; signed articles of confederation; received commission as colonel of Virginia forces February, 1777; Registrar of Virginia land office from 1780 to 1791; Mayor of Richmond 1785; member of Virginia Legislature at various times; died at "Belvedere," his county seat, near Richmond, 1807.

[Council Journal Hist. Convention, 1775-6, Henings' Statutes.]

The inhabitants of West Augusta wrote to the convention requesting that John Harvie and John Neville be allowed to represent them, to which the convention agreed. The people of West Augusta afterwards returned thanks to John Harvie for the way in which he represented them. He was one of the committee

appointed to prepare and bring in an ordinance for raising and embodying a sufficient force for the defence and protection of this colony. It was resolved in convention that John Harvie, gentleman, be appointed commissioner to receive the money due to the several claimants in the counties of Berkeley, Frederick, Dunmore, Hampshire and West Augusta, from the public, on account of the late expedition against the Indians, and pay the same to them, and the said John Harvie is required to settle and state all the accounts of the said expedition that remain unsettled, and advise those already settled in West Augusta, and make report thereof to the next convention.

Mr. Harvie's report was referred to the committee of which Mr. Richard Lee, as chairman, acknowledged them as having been examined and found correct. The convention allowed him 200 pounds for his services and all his expenses. John Harvie and Thomas Walker were appointed to decide whether they should engage such Indian warriors of the neighboring tribes as are willing to march to the assistance of this colony. May 24, 1776, Mr. Harvie was added to the Committee of Propositions and Grievances, and to the committee to prepare a declaration of rights and such a form of government as will be most likely to maintain peace and order in this colony and secure substantial and equal liberty to the people, to be called the "Bill of Rights."

Jacquelin Burwell Harvie, son of John Harvie and Margaret Morton Jones, was born in Richmond, Va., October 2, 1788; married September 18, 1813, at "Oak Hill," Fauquier county, Mary, daughter of John Marshall and his wife, Mary Willis (Ambler). He was prepared for the navy, and was serving as a midshipman when the terrible tragedy of the burning of the Richmond theatre occurred. On that occasion, he lost a brother, a sister and a niece. The loss of so many of his family required him to resign the navy that he might assist in the management of the large estate. During his life he filled many places of honor and trust. He was for many years a State Senator, and at the time of his death was Major General of Militia for the Eastern District of Virginia.

He was full of enterprise, and the Richmond Dock and Water Works and Belle Isle Nail Factory attest his public spirit. It was remarked of him that he was too far in advance of his time. He died in Richmond, February 9th, 1856.

Virginia, widow of Spicer Patrick, M. D.,
daughter of
Jaquelin B. Harvie and Mary Marshall,
son of
John Harvie and Margaret Morton Jones,
daughter of
Gabriel Jones and Margaret Strother,
son of
John Jones and Elizabeth.

For the purpose of this excursus we repeat a few facts mentioned in the sketch of Gabriel Jones, and add several not there mentioned.

John Jones and his wife Elizabeth came to Virginia from Montgomery county, North Wales, Great Britain.

Gabriel Jones was born in the County of York, three miles from Williamsburg, May 17th, 1724. He married October 16th, 1749, the Rev. James Keith officiating, Margaret Morton, widow of George Morton and daughter of Major William Strother and Margaret Watts, of King George County, in the Colony of Virginia.

Gabriel was educated in England, and studied law with Mr. John Houghton at Lyons Inn. On his return to Virginia, he settled in Frederick County. Became Private Secreary to Lord Fairfax. No lawyer was known in the bailiwick of Augusta County until 1745, when we find Gabriel Jones. Queens Attorney Court was formed in this year, when he qualified to practice in it. In 1778 he was appointed Deputy Commonwealth's Attorney. He was elected member of Confederate Congress, 1774, and of the State Convention 1788. He was one of the most prominent men of the Colony and a man of wealth and culture. He was a member of the House of Burgesses from Frederick County 1748-1751, Augusta County, 1757-8-64, 69, 71. He was appointed with Lord Fairfax and others, trustees for the towns of Stevensburg and Winchester, they or any five of them at any time, to establish such rules about building houses and laying off towns as they deem best and convenient. He was commissioned to ascertain the pay and subsistence of Militia, and damage done by Cherokees and Catawba Indians. He was also appointed with Samuel Washington and George Read, by the Congress and also by Virginia to go to Fort Pitt to look into the condition of affairs there in 1777.

(Waddell's History of Augusta County, R. A. Brock, History of

Convention 1788. Vol. II., page 16-19- Va. Hit. Coll; Meade, Vol. II., p. 324-5. Hennigs Stat., Vo. VII., pp. 230, 282; Vol. IX., p. 374.)

Virginia, widow of Spicer Patrick, M. D.,
daughter of
Jacqulin B. Harvie and Mary Marshall,
daughter of
John Marshall and Mary Willis Ambler,
son of
Thomas Marshall and Mary Randolph Keith,
son of
John Marshall and Elizabeth Markham,

The Marshall family were of British descent, having come from Wales to Virginia. They were distinguished by their intellect and force of character. John Marshall, son of Thomas Marshall was born in Westmoreland County, Virginia, in 1700; died 1752. Married, 1724, Elizabeth Markham, daughter of a wealthy Englishman, who for political reasons had recently come to the Colony. He was a Militia officer and of influence in his neighborhood. He left four sons, the most distinguished of whom was Thomas, who was regarded by his children with veneration. He was born in Westmoreland, April 2nd. 1732. Moved to Fauquier, 1753. Married, 1754, in Fauquier, Mary Randolph Keith, daughter of Rev. James Keith and Mary Isham Randolph, of Tuckahoe. Thomas Marshall was appointed by Washington his assistant in surveying the land of Lord Fairfax. "They had been neighbors from birth, associates from boyhood and were always friends." Thomas Marshall was a man of extraordinary vigor of mind and of undaunted courage. He was Lieutenant of Volunteers in the French and Indian wars. He was repeatedly elected to the Virginia House of Burgesses, never failing to obtain the suffrages of the people, whose respect and confidence he held in the fullest measure, and he warmly participated in all the earliest movements to encourage the Colonists in resistance to British tyrrany. When the call to arms was made in Virginia, he was one of the first to offer his services and was a field officer in the first regiment raised. Was active in raising a patriotic company known as the Culpepper Minute men. This was the earliest organization in the cause of freedom. He was a member of the

Convention of 1775-6, but left the Convention to take an active part in the field. When his name was proposed for the office of Major he was elected by acclamation in the Convention. In his first engagement at the battle of the Great Bridge, the first engagement on Virginia soil, he was distinguished for valor and good conduct—afterwards he successfully commanded in the Continental line, the Third Virginia Infantry and the First Virginia Artillery as their Colonel. He was in the battles of Germantown and Brandytown, having three horses killed under him, and in the latter engagement contributed largely by his courage and skill to save the American army. He endured all the hardships of Valley Forge with three of his sons. In 1779 he was sent with his regiment to join the army in South Carolina and with part of his regiment was taken prisoner in Charleston. During the term of his parole he made his first visit to Kentucky. Returning to Virginia he remained to the close of the war, and in 1785 moved with the younger members of his family to Kentucky. He died in 1806, at the home of his son, Captain Thomas Marshall, in Mason county, and lies buried in the family cemetery near Washington, in that State. In token of his great bravery and patriotic services the House of Burgesses through their Speaker, Edmund Randolph, presented him with a sword, which descended to his son Thomas, and by his descendant was presented to the Maysville Historical Society. The wife of Colonel Thomas Marshall was Mary Randolph Keith. Her father, James Keith, was an Episcopal clergyman and cousin german to the last Earl Marshall, and to Field Marshal James Keith, one of the most valued of the great Fredericks Lieutenants, who saved the Prussian army and fell at Hutchkirch, "as poor as a Scott, though he had had the ransoming of three cities." James Keith, the father of Mary, had to leave Scotland on account of taking part in the rebellion of 1715, and took refuge in the Colony of Virginia.

Thomas and Mary Marshall had fifteen children, seven sons and eight daughters, all of whom arrived at mature years. The oldest was John.

(Horace Binning Eulogy, &c.; Story, J. Marshall. Campbell Hist., Henning; Magruders Hist. of Marshall.)

John Marshall, son of Thomas and Mary Marshall, was born in Fauquier county, September 24th, 1775. His father was a man of fine mind and great intelligence, who devoted himself personally to

the training of his children. He had a private teacher from Scotland, Mr. James Thompson, a clergman, who came to this country and took up his residence in the family of Colonel Marshall, and instructed his children. John early displayed a strong love for English literature, especially poetry and history. At the age of twelve he knew by heart a large portion of Pope's writings and was familiar with Dryden and Shakespeare and Milton. He was sent to the classical academy of the Messrs. Campbell in Westmoreland county. After his return home he pursued his study of Latin with his old preceptor, Mr. Thompson, who was an accomplished classicist. He was fond of athletic sports and exercise in the open air. He began the study of law at eighteen, but his mind became so excited over the impending war with Great Britain that his studies were put aside.

At the age of nineteen he was chosen Lieutenant of a company of Minute men. His first experience was at the battle of Great Bridge. July, 1776, he was appointed First Lieutenant in a company of the 11th Virginia Regiment. In May, 1777, he became a Captain. He was at the battle of Brandywine, September 11th, 1777; at Germantown, October 4th, 1777; at Monmouth, June 28th, 1778; at Stony Point, and endured the hardships of Valley Forge.

One of his contemporaries says at this time his judicial capacity and fairness were held in such estimation by many of his brother officers, that in many disputes of a certain description he was constantly chosen arbiter. In argument, disputed points were often submitted to his judgment, which, given in writing, and accompanied as it commonly was by some reasons in support of his decision, obtained general acquiescence.

At this period, besides his field service, he acted as Deputy Judge Advocate of the army, and thus came into personal relations with Washington, securing confidence and regard of life-long duration. One of his messmates, Slaughter, says: "He was the best tempered man I ever knew. During his sufferings at Valley Forge nothing ever disturbed him. If he had only bread to eat it was just as well; if only meat, it made no difference. If any of the officers murmured at their deprivations, he would shame them by good natured railery, or encourage them by his own exuberance of spirits. He was an excellent companion and idolized by the soldiers and his

brother officers, whose gloomy hours were enlivened by his inexhaustible fund of anecdote.

There were more officers than were needed in the army, and in 1779 he returned to Virginia for a time and attended a course of law andp hilosophy at William and Mary College. He was licensed to practice law in 1780, but the courts were closed and he returned to the army. After the surrender at Yorktown he entered on the practice of law. His success was marked from the beginning. In 1782 he was sent to the Legislature from Fauquier, and was appointed a member of the Council of State.

At Yorktown he met Miss Mary Willis Ambler, daughter of Treasurer Jaqulin Ambler. They were married January 3rd, 1783, at the "Cottage," in Hanover county, a family country place.

In 1785 his father moved to Kentucky, and gave him the family place, "Oak Hill," but he removed to Richmond to carry on the practice of law. In 1787 he was in the Legislature. In 1788 he was a member of the Convention that ratified the United States Constitution. In 1789-90-91 he represented Richmond in the Legislature. He now devoted himself to law and became distinguished for his clear and comprehensive grasp and logical analysis of the legal and political questions of the day.

Though gentle in his manner and careless of his dress, his intellectual powers placed him at the head of his profession. Washington offered him the place of Attorney General and afterwards the Ministry to France, but both positions were declined. In 1797 he was sent as Envoy to France by Mr. Adams. On this mission he acted with such dignity, ability and manly spirit, that on his return he was received with warmest enthusiasm. A public dinner was given him by both Houses of Congress then in session "as an evidence of affection for his person and of their grateful approbation of the patriotic firmness with which he sustained the dignity of his country during his important mission.

On his return to Virginia he was not less warmly welcomed by all parties. He was elected to Congress in 1799. Was Secretary of State under John Adams. Whilst in this office was appointed Chief Justice of the United States, January 31st, 1801, which office he held till his death in 1835. In 1829 he was a member and presiding officer of the State Constitutional Convention. Shockoe cemetery, Richmond, Virginia, contains his remains. He wrote this inscrip-

tion for his tombstone: "John Marshall, son of Thomas and Mary Marshall, was born September 24, 1755, intermarried with Mary Willis Ambler, the 3rd day of January, 1783, departed this life the 6th of July, 1835."

Virginia, widow of Spicer Patrick, M. D.,
daughter of
Jacquelin B. Harvie and Mary Marshall,
daughter of
John Marshall and Mary Willis Ambler,
son of
Thomas Marshall and Mary Randolph Keith,
daughter of
James Keith and Mary Isham Randolph,
daughter of
Thomas Randolph and Judith Churchill,
son of
Thomas Randolph and Mary Isham.

William Randolph came to Virginia from Warwickshire, England, about 1669. On July 29th of that year he was Clerk of Henrico County. He held at different times the offices of Justice, High Sheriff, and Colonel of Militia, and was a member of the House of Burgesses from Henrico, from 1684 to 1699, and Speaker of the House in 1698. Was Attorney General of the Colony in 1696. In 1693 by the charter was appointed one of the first visitors and trustees for founding William and Mary College. He died April 11th, 1711, and was buried at his country seat, "Turkey Island." His tombstone bears his coat of arms.

By his wife Mary, a daughter of Henry Isham, of Burmuda Hundred, Henrico county, he had with other issue, Thomas Randolph, of Tuckahoe, Goochland county, who was appointed one of the first Justices of that county in 1728. He was the father of Mary Isham (Randolph), who married James Keith.

(Henning's Stats., Vol. III., p. 167; Campbell's Hist. of Virginia.)

Virginia, widow of Spicer Patrick, M. D.,
daughter of
Jacquelin B. Harvie and Mary Marshall,
daughter of

John Marshall and Mary Willis Ambler,
daughter of
Jacquelin Ambler and Rebecca Burwell,
son of
Richard Ambler and Martha Jacquelin,
son of
John Ambler and Elizabeth Burkadike.

Richard Ambler, son of John Ambler and Elizabeth Burkadike, of the city of York, England, was born December 24th, 1690, died 1756. Came to Virginia, 1716, settled at Yorktown; was Collector of Customs and naval officer for District of York river, an office both lucrative and honorable, and which he discharged with great integrity. In 1724 he married Elizabeth Jacquelin, daughter of Edward Jacquelin, and Martha Cary, a daughter of William Cary, of Warwick. Elizabeth was born 1709; died 1756.

Jacquelin Ambler, son of Richard and Elizabeth Jacquelin Ambler, was born in the town of little York (Yorktown), August 7th, 1742. Married Rebecca, daughter of the Hon. Lewis Burwell, of Gloucester. Was Collector of the port at Yorktown and naval officer of York river, which office he resigned in 1777. Member of the Privy Council, 1780. Treasurer of the State, which office he held until his death. He stood so high for character that he was called the Aristides of Virginia.

In a small handwriting below the records in the family Bible this is written:

"I will have mercy unto a thousand generations of them that love and keep my commandments.
Let this be remembered now in the fifth generation,
We boast not that we declare our births,
From loins enthroned or rulers of the earth,
But higher far our proud pretentions rise,
Children of parents past into the skies."

Virginia, widow of Spicer Patrick, M. D.,
daughter of
Jacquelin B. Harvie and Mary Marshall,
daughter of
John Marshall and Mary Willis Ambler,
daughter of

Jacquelin Ambler and Rebecca Burwell,
son of
Richard Ambler and Elizabeth Jacquelin,
daughter of
Edward Jacquelin and Martha Cary.

Edward Jacquelin, of Jamestown, Virginia, son of John Jacquelin and Elizabeth Craddock, of the County of Kent, England, descended in the direct line from the noble family of La Roche Jacquelin. They were Protestants, and fled from La Vandee in France to England a short time previous to the massacre of St. Bartholomew. They were eminently wealthy, and converted a large portion of their wealth into gold and silver, which they transported in safety to England. He was born in 1663; died 1739. Was born in Kent County, England; came to Virginia, 1697; settled at Jamestown; married Martha Cary, daughter of William Cary, of Warwick. Member of the House of Burgesses and Justice of the Peace. His wife was born 1686; died 1738.

Edward and Martha (Cary) Jacquelin had one son born in 1716; died 1734; aged 18 years. This Edward and his mother gave the silver baptismal bowl to the James City Church. It is now used at the Monumental Church, Richmond, Virginia.

Virginia, widow of Spicer Patrick, M. D.,
daughter of
Jacquelin B. Harvie and Mary Marshall,
daughter of
John Marshall and Mary Willis Ambler,
daughter of
Jacquelin Ambler and Rebecca Burwell,
son of
Richard Ambler and Elizabeth Jacquelin,
daughter of
Edward Jacquelin and Martha Cary,
daughter of
William Cary and Martha,
son of
Miles Cary and Anna Taylor.

Miles Cary was descended from the Carys of Devonshire, England; his great-grand-father being William, Mayor of Bristol in

1546. Miles was the son of John Cary, of Bristol, England, who was born there in 1620; came to Virginia in 1648, and settled in the County of Warwick. Member of House of Burgesses, 1658-9-60. Of the Council, 1663. March 29th, 1666, superintended the erection of defences at Point Comfort against the Dutch. There lost his life in 1667. Married Anne Taylor, daughter of Colonel Thomas Taylor, of York; also a member of the Council.

William Cary, son of Miles and Anne (Taylor) Cary; was a member of the House of Burgesses, 1692, 1708, 1710; died August, 1711. He was the father of Martha, who married Edward Jacquelin. His will was made August 25, 1711.

(Meade; Hennig's Stats; Brock.)

Burwell, Carter,
Higginson, Armstead.

Virginia, widow of Spicer Patrick, M. D.,
daughter of
Jacquelin B. Harvie and Mary Marshall,
daughter of
John Marshall and Mary Willis Ambler,
daughter of
Jacquelin Ambler and Rebecca Burwell,
daughter of
Lewis Burwell and Mary Willis,
son of
Nathaniel Burwell and Elizabeth Carter,
son of
Lewis Burwell and Abigail Smith,
son of
Lewis Burwall and Lucy Higginson.

The Burwell family is of very ancient date, upon the borders of England and Scotland. According to tombstones and epitaphs, the Burwells of Virginia are descended from an ancient family in Bedfordshire and Northamptonshire in England, but the first to whom we trace is Edward Burwell, of Haslington, Bedfordshire, England, (probably the Edward Burwell, of the Virginia company, 1616), and his wife Dorothy, daughter of William Bedell, in Huntingtonshire, by whom he had a son, Lewis Burwell; born 1625, who at an early age came to Virginia. His mother married for her second

husband Roger Wingate Masurer, of the Colony of Virginia. By a record in York County, 1648, she conveyed a certain property to her only and beloved son, Lewis Burwell. This Major Lewis Burwell acquired a very large landed estate, and settled on the present Carter's Creek, in Gloucester County. In 1640 he married Lucy, daughter of the "valiant Captain Robert Higginson." Lewis Burwell died in 1658; had an only son, Lewis Burwell, of Gloucester and Queen's Creek, York County; was member of the Council for many years, from which body he retired in 1702. He married Abagail Smith, niece and heiress of Nathaniel Bacon, Sen., President of the Council. He was grand-son of Sir James Bacon, of "Triston," and cousin of the great Lord Bacon. The eldest son of Lewis and Abagail Burwell was Nathaniel, who married Elizabeth, daughter of "King" Robert Carter. They had one daughter and three sons. Their eldest, Lewis Burwell, was born in 1710; married 1736, Mary Willis, daughter of Colonel Francis and Anne Willis, of Gloucester. He was educated in England; matriculated at Cain's College, Cambridge in 1731; was a man of genius and learning. He was Burgess as early as 1736; a little later became member of the Council, and as President of that body acting Governor of the Colony, 1750; died 1752.

(Meade; Brock's Virginia and Virginians; Burk's History of Virginia.)

Virginia, widow of Spicer Patrick, M. D.,
daughter of
Jacquelin B. Harvie and Mary Marshall,
daughter of
John Marshall and Mary Willis Ambler,
daughter of
Jacquelin Ambler and Rebecca Burwell,
daughter of
Lewis Burwell and Mary Willis,
son of
Nathaniel Burwell and Elizabeth Carter,
son of
Lewis Burwell and Abagail Smith,
son of
Lewis Burwell and Lucy Higginson,
son of
Robert Higginson.

Colonel Robert Higginson, in his daughter's epitaph, is said to have been one of the first commanders who conquered the Dominion of Virginia from the power of the "Heathen." The York County records state that Captain Robert Higginson received gifts of land from the county for his services against the Indians. Captain Higginson commanded the forces raised to protect the Colony after the second massacre; was still on duty in 1646, and received land from the General Assembly for his services. His only daughter and heiress, Lucy, married first Major Lewis Burwell; second. Colonel William Bernard. of the Council; third. Colonel Philip Ludwell. of the Council and Governor of North Carolina.

(Meade, Vol. I., Records of York County.)

Virginia, widow of Spicer Patrick, M. D.,
daughter of
Jacquelin B. Harvie and Mary Marshall,
daughter of
John Marshall and Mary Willis Ambler,
daughter of
Jacquelin Ambler and Rebecca Burwell,
daughter of
Lewis Burwell and Mary Willis,
son of
Nathaniel Burwell and Elizabeth Carter,
daughter of
Robert Carter and Judith Armstead,
son of
John Carter and Sarah Ludlow.

John Carter came from England; settled in Norfolk County, which he represented in the House of Burgesses in 1642; commander against Rappahanock Indians in 1654; Burgess for Lancaster for a number of years; died 1699; married for his third wife Sarah. daughter of Gabriel Ludlow; had a son who on account of his large landed possessions was known as "King" Carter. He was Speaker of the House of Burgesses for six years, 1694-1699. Treasurer of the Colony many years. Member of the Council. 1699-1726, and as member of that body acting Governor of the Colony. Married first. Judith Armstead. eldest daughter of John Armstead, of "Hesse" Gloucester. Their daughter. Elizabeth. married Nathaniel Burwell. Robert Carter died 1732.

(Campbell's History of Virginia: Meade.)

John Armstead, of "Hesse" Gloucester, was the son of William Armstead, and the father of Judith, who married Robert Carter. He was long a Justice of the Peace in Gloucester, High Sheriff in 1676, and member of Council from 1687 to 1691.

(Burk's History of Virginia; Hening, Vol. III., page 565; Sainsburg's Abstracts.)

THE CAMERONS

FAMILY HISTORY OF THE CAMERONS OF VIRGINIA—BY W. T. PRICE.

But few if any names are held in higher honor, or in more affectionate remembrance than that of Major Charles Edward Cameron, Warm Springs, Bath County, Virginia. He was a son of Dr. John Cameron, who was the first of the Cameron clan to come to America, so far as known to us. He was a son of Evan Cameron, of Fassifern, a younger brother of Lochiel, who led the Camerons at the battle of Culloden. Lochiel and Evan were sons of "John the Tanister," who was the son of Sir Evan Dhu Cameron, according to W. and A. K. Johnston's "Scottish Clans and their Tartans." The term "Tanister" signifies land owner or governor. In Johnston's book this is recorded:

"An eminent native of Kilmalie was the famous Sir Evan of Lochiel, who was born in 1629 and died in 1719, and was a famous cavalier in his time. From his swarthy complexion he was named Evan Dhu. At the head of his clan Sir Evan is said to have made no less than thirty-five armed forays into the territories of his enemies."

Evan Cameron of Fassifern married Lucy Campbell, of Barcoldane, the mother of Dr. John Cameron, the American immigrant, and immediate ancestor of the Virginia Camerons. Lucy Campbell's father succeeded to the estate Glenmore, on the death of his brother, who was shot at the Ferry of Ballachulish in Appin by Allan Braec Stewart, otherwise known as Vic Jan VicAlaster, a crime for which the Laird of Ardshiel was judicially executed by the Duke of Argyle at the Castle of Inverary.

In the period of the Scottish civil wars the Camerons were ever loyal to the house of Stewart. One of the poet Campbell's more

thrilling poems is about Sir Lochiel just before the battle of Culloden.

Popularly he was known in his clan as the gentle Lochiel, while in the histories he is written of as the "Great Lochiel." It was Lochiel, who in his loving, ardent way exclaimed to Prince Charles "Come weal, come woe, I'll follow thee!"

Lochiel Campbell's steel Highland pistols, found on the bloody and fatal field of Culloden, marked with his initials, may be seen in the museum of antiquities at Edinburg.

In their religious proclivities the Camerons of that period were Catholics, and eagerly sided with the cause of the Pretender, who was the son of James the Second of England, born after his father had been dethroned. After his father's death in 1701, the Pretender was declared by the King of France the rightful King of England. In France he was called the Chevalier St. George; in England the Pretender. Parties in England, more especially Scotland, espoused the Pretender's claims from time to time. Many lives were sacrificed and many grievous calamities occasioned. It was in the reign of George the Second that the Pretender made his last effort, being then an old man. His partisans the Jacobites put forward his son Charles Edward, known as the Young Pretender and the Young Chevalier.

The Scotch Highlanders favored the young Pretender and when he joined them there was a Scottish uprising to make him King, where upon many noble and gallant men lost their fortunes and their lives. In the battle of Culloden, April, 1746, the Scotch were sorely defeated.

The defeated Pretender found it hazardous to make his escape abroad with such tempting rewards offered for his head. True to their character the Scottish partisans were very true to him and after many romantic escapes he reached France.

Dr. John Cameron, the ancestor of the Virginia Camerons, bore the colors of his clan on the field of Colodon and after the loss of the battle many of his relatives along with a number of other prominent persons engaged in the rebellion were carried to London and executed. Dr. Cameron, the color-bearer, made his way to Spain on a Spanish warship. From Spain he soon found a way to the West Indies, Cuba probably, and was there a short while, thence he went to New York City. In New York he met the widowed lady

who afterwards became his wife, Mrs. Margaret Murray. Her maiden name was Margaret McBarron. She was a native of Ireland, of Scottish ancestry, and a Presbyterian in her religious preferences. Mr. Murray, her first husband, was a wealthy merchant of New York, and a native of Liverpool, England. There were two daughters by the first marriage, Sarah and Mary Murray.

Dr. John Cameron moved from New York soon after his marriage and located in Norfolk, Va., where his two children, Charles Edward and George Hugh, were born. The eldest, Charles Edward, was born February 22, 1853. Hugh was several years younger, but the date lost.

Charles Cameron was named for the young Pretender. At first he was named George Hugh, but when he was several years old his father, Dr. Cameron, now of Norfolk, Va., gave a dinner to some Scotch friends who had fought for the Pretender, and they became so stimulated in patriotic feeling of devotion to their favorite that Dr. Cameron, to please them, sent for a Catholic priest, had Charles baptized the second time and named him for the Catholic prince, Charles Edward, the last of the Stuarts, who claimed the crown of Scotland.

Dr. John Cameron resided in Norfolk until Charles was six years old, and then moved to Staunton, Va., about 1760. In the course of time amnesty was accorded rebellious Scottish subjects so they could return to Scotland and repossess their property. Whereupon Dr. Cameron sailed for Scotland, hoping to recover his property and then return and make Staunton his permanent home, but he never returned, lost at sea.

Charles E. Cameron knew that his father, Dr. John Cameron, had in his own name a large estate in Scotland, and was in the line of inheritance also to a fine property besides, as his father's uncle and many relatives had perished, so that if Dr. Cameron had lived to recover his property he would have been possessed of an immense estate that otherwise reverted to the English crown.

At the time of his father's death Charles was a mere child, and had nothing in hand to show that he had any right to the Cameron estate in Scotland. While a half-grown boy he clerked in a Staunton store, and a few years later was offered employment as bank-keeper to the Mossy Creek Iron Works, for Henry Miller, the owner and builder of the first iron plant in the upper Valley of the

Shenandoah, in the northwest section of Augusta county, twelve or fifteen miles from Staunton.

At the age of 19 young Cameron's thoughts turned to love, and he married Nancy, a daughter of his employer, a little younger than himself. In about six months after marriage the girl wife died.

On Monday morning, October 10, 1774, Charles E. Cameron and his brother Hugh were with the Virginia troops at Point Pleasant. A battle not being expected, Charles Cameron and others were detailed and put in charge of Jacob Warwick to hunt and slaughter meat rations for the proposed expedition to the Indian towns in Ohio, as ordered by Governor Dunmore. In the meantime the battle had been suddenly joined, and by the time the hunters and butchers rallied and recrossed the Kanawha the battle had virtually ceased.

Upon his return from hunting he found that his brother George Cameron and his brother-in-law, Colonel Charles Lewis, were killed in the action.

Mrs. Colonel Charles Lewis was Sarah Murray, half sister of Charles and George Cameron.

In person George Cameron was tall and of very dark complexion, with dark hair and eyes, and very high prominent forehead, bearing a striking resemblance to his father, Dr. John Cameron. While he was a child his playmates would sportively tell him that if he was ever shot by the Indians it would be in the forehead, as it was so prominent, and so it turned out, for when Charles found his brother among the slain the bullet holes were in his forehead.

Charles Cameron served through the revolution as a lieutenant, and was with the Virginia troops at the surrender of Yorktown. Colonel Peyton, in his history of Augusta county, mentions Charles Cameron as one of the "Gentlemen Justices of Augusta county," in 1790.

On December 14, 1790, the counties of Bath and Pendleton were formed from Augusta. Mr. Cameron received a grant of land for services in the revolution, and it is believed he went from Augusta to Bath about the time the county was formed. He accumulated lands in addition to the grant, and finally possessed a magnificent estate. About four miles west of the Warm Springs he selected a site for his residence on a precipitous bluff overlooking the Jacksons river, and commanding a lovely view up and down the

valley. He built a large and commodious house of stone, one of the handsomest west of the Blue Ridge at that time.

Major Cameron was the first Clerk of Bath county, serving both courts as such for a great number of years. He was succeeded by his nephew, Charles Lewis Francisco, who was in his day one of the most widely known county clerks in the State of Virginia.

Near Charles Cameron's residence is one of the finest of mountain springs, over which he had erected a stone spring house two stories high. In the upper story he kept the records of Bath county a hundred years ago. That house is still in a good state of preservation, and the residence is about as good as ever.

Soon after the revolution, on the organization of the militia, Mr. Cameron was appointed colonel of a regiment, and was ever afterwards known as Colonel Cameron. It appears that he was claimed by Lafayette as a personal friend, for when Lafayette visited America Colonel Cameron went with the valley veterans to welcome him, and General Lafayette presented Colonel Cameron a handsome gold-headed cane as a token of his esteem for him personally, and it was prized by him all his life, and was in constant use.

After being a widower for twenty years, Colonel Cameron married for his second wife Rachel Primrose Warwick in 1793. She was the eldest daughter of Jacob Warwick, so distinguished in the pioneer annals of West Augusta and the early settlement of Bath and Pocahontas. This lady was born March 17, 1773, at Dunmore, now Pocahontas county, but at that time it was Augusta county. An extended notice of her parents appeared in the WEST VIRGINIA HISTORICAL MAGAZINE July, 1902.

Like the home of her parents at Dunmore, then at Clover Lick, had been a place for ministerial entertainment with the best of cheer and a place for worshipping God, so Mrs. Cameron's princely home on Jackson's river was ever open for ministers and God's service. In early youth Mrs. Cameron united with the Windy Cove Presbyterian church, but at the time of her death, November 6, 1858, at the age of 86 years, she was a member of the Lexington Presbyterian church. Her remains were borne to the Warm Springs for interment.

Colonel and Mrs. Cameron were the parents of three children. Two died in infancy, and for several years they were childless, during which time they adopted two nephews—Andrew Gatewood, a

son of Mrs. Cameron's sister, Nancy Gatewood Poage; the other was Charles L. Francisco, whose mother was Mary Murray, Colonel Cameron's half sister, who had become Mrs. Francisco. It had been their intention for these nephews to inherit their great estate, but after these nephews had lived with them ten years, their son, Andrew Warwick Cameron, was born June 6, 1806.

Nevertheless the nephews were liberally provided for. Andrew Gatewood was educated for a physician, and was presented by his aunt with a farm in Pocahontas county. Colonel Charles Cameron gave his nephew, Charles L. Francisco, a farm in Bath county.

Mr. Francisco would say of his aunt Cameron that "her affectionate heart appeared to embrace all the children of want around her, and her home was as open as her heart for the accommodation of all who needed and desired her help."

These worthy people reared five or six nephews and nieces, besides some other young persons not relatives.

Colonel Cameron died at his home "Fassifern," Bath county, four miles west of Warm Springs, June 14, 1829, in the 77th year of his age. In personality, Colonel Cameron was of middle stature, blue eyes, fair complexion, and his hair brown until silvered over with age. His teeth were sound to the last.

This noble man deserves lasting remembrance as a brave, patriotic soldier of the revolution, a citizen without reproach, one of the best of fathers and husbands. Mrs. Cameron survived her husband about thirty years. When Mrs. Cameron was about 36 years old she came near her death by being thrown from her horse. Her hip was broken, and she was lame ever afterward and used a crutch or cane. After the death of her husband she made constant use of his cane, the gift of General Lafayette.

In reference to Andrew Warwick Cameron, the only surviving child of these worthy persons, the following particulars are given: He was favored with the best educational facilities then in reach by instructions of Prof. Crutchfield at Warm Springs; he spent some time with Dr. John Hendren in Augusta county, and then went to the University of Virginia.

His first marriage was with Margaret Grattan, daughter of Captain Samuel Miller, owner of the famous Mossy Creek Iron Works. Captain Miller was one of the more prominent and wealthy citizens of his day, and was a presidential elector on the Clay ticket in 1832.

A. W. Cameron's first marriage occurred January 25, 1828, the nuptials being celebrated by the distinguished Dr. John Hendren.

Mrs. Cameron died April 13, 1829, aged 19 years, leaving an infant daughter named Margaret Grattan Miller, who became Mrs. William Boies Cochran, of Augusta county, January 6, 1859. Mr. and Mrs. Cochran were the parents of three daughters—Maria, now Mrs. Tate Sterrett, of Hot Springs; Rachel Primrose, now Mrs. A. C. Harman, Staunton, Margaret Miller, now Mrs. Dr. I. P. Bishop, of Rockingham county.

The sons were Warwick Cameron and George Moffett. George died March 4, 1883, aged 14 years.

Colonel A. W. Cameron's second marriage was with Ellen McCue, daughter of John Hide, near Lexington, who was high sheriff of Rockbridge county, and a citizen of great wealth and influence. Mrs. Hide was Sallie Crawford, of Augusta county. There were four sons and five daughters in his second family—John, Charles, Andrew, George, Primrose, Sally Mary, Lucy and Jennie. John Cameron, the only surviving son, is a popular physician at Goshen, Va.

Charles, a Confederate soldier, is survived by his son, Wm. T. Cameron, a physician in northern Pocahontas and adjacent sections of Randolph county, W. Va.

Andrew and George are deceased. Andrew was unmarried, and George is survived by his family, who are residents of the Goshen vicinity.

Primrose became Mrs. Joseph Sherrard, Lexington, Va. Mr. Sherrard is a member of the Rockbridge bar.

Sallie became Mrs. Thomas White, youngest son of Rev. Dr. W. S. White, of Lexington, one of the most eminent Presbyterian ministers in Virginia in his day. Captain Tom White is one of the foremost business men in Lexington.

Mary became Mrs. Judge Leigh, and lives in Lexington.

Lucy became Mrs. Dr. White, an eminent physician in Lexington.

Jennie became Mrs. A. W. Harman, of Richmond, who is State Treasurer.

While he was yet a very young man, A. W. Cameron was appointed colonel of the Bath county regiment of Virginia militia, and was ever afterwards known as Colonel Cameron. He was a Henry Clay Whig, and represented his county in the Legislature

occasionally, though the county was democratic, of the Andrew Jackson type. In 1840 he left the "Fassifern" princely home on Jackson's river and located on the Hyde plantation, near Lexington, where Captain Tom White now resides.

When the war between the States commenced, Colonel Cameron was broken in health, and had passed the age limit for military service. His four sons joined the Confederate army. He was oppressed with anxiety about his sons, and was heard to say that so many of his Scotch ancestors had died in battle that he had a presentiment that he would not die a natural death himself, and anxiously felt that his sons might meet death in battle. Two days previously to the battle of Manasses, Colonel Cameron rode to Lexington to hear the news from the seat of war. Many persons had gathered in front of the hotel, eagerly awaiting the mails. When the mail coach drove up, one of the passengers, in the act of taking from it a Minnie rifle, struck the gun in a way which caused it to discharge, by which Colonel Cameron was instantly killed, William McClung mortally wounded and William Smith, of the Virginia Military Institute, slightly wounded in the wrist. Thus Colonel Cameron's sad presentiment was realized July 18, 1861, in the 55th year of his age.

In personality, Colonel Cameron was of the highest type of imposing manhood, over six feet high, features regular, hair brown and eyes dark; hands and feet remarkably small, but shapely. As to traits of character, he was a loving, thoughtful, devoted husband, a judicious, affectionate father, a true friend and a kind, considerate master. While he was imbued with much family pride, he was not offensively so. He never boasted of his family's record before his visitors or other associates, but within the sacred precincts of the family circle he endeavored to impress it on his children that it was a great privilege and a blessing to have a gentle and honorable ancestry.

The second Mrs. Cameron survived her noble husband more than thirty years, living to a very advanced, yet serenely happy old age. In her youth she was admired as one of the Rockbridge beauties, and received marked attentions at the pleasure resorts, but was not spoiled. To her honor be it written that by those who knew her best she was admired and loved for her sweetly, gentle disposition and her sincerely, lovely Christian character. It can be said of her

with peculiar emphasis that "her children rise up and call her blessed."

The compiler of these sketches of the Virginia Camerons feels he should not lay aside his pen until grateful appreciation is expressed for the helpful service rendered by Mrs. Tate Sterret, of Hot Springs. With loving care she has gathered up all that is most valuable in the preparation of these historical papers.

ALEXANDER CAMPBELL.

TEACHER, PREACHER AND STATESMAN.

BY G. L. CRANMER.

The subject of this sketch was born in County Antrim, Ireland, on the 12th of September, 1788, near the site of the ancient McShane castle which stood on the northern shore of Lough Neagle.

His father, Thomas Campbell, intermarried with Jane Corneigle in June, 1787, and he was the first offspring of this union.

For several generations his ancestors had been engaged in literary pursuits. He was educated in Ireland and at the University of Glasgow, Scotland, and emigrated to America in the year 1809 at the age of 21 and settled in Washington county, Pa. At an early age he developed an ardent thirst for the acquisition of knowledge. His studies in literary and other pursuits were under the guidance and direction of his father, who, at the same time, did not neglect his religious training. His progress in learning was such that in his 17th year he became assistant teacher to his father, who had some time previous, in connection with his pastoral duties, established a school.

Soon after this he made an open profession of religion, and was received as a communicant in the Seceders church. He had a profound reverence for the Scriptures as being the infallible guide in religion. In the view entertained by him, the existence of sects and parties was one of the greatest hindrances to the success of the gospel.

On March 12, 1811, he was married to Miss Brown, of Brooke county, Va., who deceased October 22, 1827. She was a woman of great faith and piety, an affectionate wife and a devoted mother.

He was twice married, his second wife being a Miss Bakewell, who survived him. From the time of his first marriage in 1811 to the year 1818, he devoted his time to farming, writing, studying and occasionally in public speaking. In this last named year he opened a seminary in Washington county, called Buffalo Seminary, for the education of young men, which he conducted for the succeeding six years, during which time he also edited a paper called The Christian Baptist, having withdrawn from the Presbyterian church, of which

ALEXANDER CAMPBELL.

denomination he and his ancestors had been members for many generations. His views on the doctrines of Calvinism led him to differ with the preachers of that persuasion and led him, after much disputation and controversy, to attempt the establishment of a creed and practice more in accordance with his own ideas of Scriptural propriety. He did not oppose creeds except as they opposed unity.

The theory upon which he acted was, as he styled it, to break down the barriers of a religious partyism, and to put an end to religious partyism and adopt the Bible as the only standard of religious truth.

In 1830 he commenced the publication of the Millenial Harbinger, which he edited for over thirty years, during all of which time he traveled extensively and was engaged in speaking, lecturing on religious and literary subjects, having frequent oral and written debates, several of which latter have been published in book form. Among these latter, some of the most notable were his debate with Robert Owen, an infidel, of Lanark, Scotland, which was held in Cincinnati in 1829; with Bishop Purcell, of Cincinnati, a Roman Catholic, in 1836; one with Dr. N. L. Rice, a Presbyterian minister, in Lexington, Ky., in 1843, and over which Henry Clay presided as moderator, and there were others with Dr. Walker, of Mt. Pleasant, O., and a Mr. McCalla, of Kentucky.

About the year 1825 he commenced a translation of the New Testament, and thus furnished the English reader a version of the same completely rendered into his own vernacular.

At the session of the Legislature of Virginia held in 1827-1828, an act was passed to take the sense of the voters on a call for a convention for the revision of the Constitution of the State. During the year 1828 a vote was taken, which resulted in a majority of 5,250 in favor of revision. The persons elected as delegates were, as a rule, typical representative men—men of great experience, learning, wisdom, and eloquence—men conspicuous for their talents on the Bench and at the Bar, as well as those distinguished as legislators and statesmen and who had made their mark in Congress and in the Legislature. Among them were two ex-Presidents, nine ex-Governors, Chief Justice John Marshall, John Randolph, Philip Doddridge, and many others distinguished in their respective callings.

The debates upon the fundamental principles of government, and the departments of the same were logical, ingenious and eloquent, and are still read and studied by politicians and statesmen.

His opponent in the election was the Hon. Samuel Sprigg, of Ohio county—a brilliant lawyer. Up to this time Mr. Campbell had been before the public only in the characters of an educator and religious teacher. He had never aspired to any civil office nor manifested any desire to engage in politics; but so strong and persistent

was the public clamor for his candidacy as a delegate to the convention that he could not resist the pressure brought to bear upon him, and overcome his scruples that he could not refuse without the danger of giving offence to his warmest friends and devoted admirers. Hence it was not without great reluctance that he finally consented to become a candidate. During the canvass he and his opponent, Mr. Spriggs, met, and addressed the voters at one of the most doubtful precincts in the district. Mr. Sprigg was the first to speak, and in the course of his remarks referred to the unfitness of persons of the ministerial profession for the discharge of such duties as would devolve upon the members of the convention and hence the importance of sending delegates whose time and lives had been spent in the investigation and application of the principles of civil government and constitutional law. He expounded also the subject of representation upon the basis of the white population exclusively as essential to the political equality of the western portion of the State. At the conclusion of Mr. Sprigg's remarks as the audience seemed to be somewhat wearied, Mr. Campbell upon arising said he would be brief in what he had to say, and proceeded to rebut in a pointed manner the arguments used by his opponent against the political competency of ministers, and in favor of the supposed claims of lawyers upon the confidence of the public, and then briefly expressed himself in favor of having representation based entirely upon the white population. Perceiving that the audience was composed almost entirely of farmers, he proceeded to say that the principle which would guide him was one of a very plain and simple nature.

Said he: "As you well know, my friends, each portion of our wide-spread country has its own peculiar interests, and in my judgment this simple fact should govern the entire course of its legislation. * * * * Agriculture is with us the commanding interest of the State; and while my opponent has been descanting upon the white basis and the black basis, you will permit me to observe that agriculture is with us the true basis of prosperity and power, and that the honest farmer, who by his daily toil increases the wealth and well-being of the commonwealth, becomes its truest benefactor. It is the interest of the farmer that should be consulted. It is his welfare especially that should be promoted, since it is the farmer who has to bear at last the burdens of the government. Allow me in conclusion to illustrate this by what I noticed when a lad

on a visit to the city of Belfast. In viewing the city, I recollect that my attention was particularly engaged by a large sign over one of its extensive stores. This sign contained four large painted figures. The first was a picture of the King in his royal robes, with the crown upon his head, and the legend issuing from his mouth, ' I reign for all.' Next to him was the figure of a Bishop, in gown and surplice, with the inscription, ' I pray for all.' The third, was a soldier in his regimentals, standing by a cannon and uttering the words, ' I fight for all.' But the fourth figure, gentlemen, was the most noteworthy and important of all in this pictorial representation of the relations of the different parts of human society. It represented a farmer amidst the utensils of his calling, standing by his plough and exclaiming, ' I pay for all.' "

Shouts and cheers greeted the conclusion. The law then required each one to announce publicly the name of his candidate in order to have his vote recorded. For a long time nothing was heard but "Campbell," "Campbell." At last one individual gave the name of "Sprigg," when that gentleman arose and pleasantly remarked, with a profound bow: "I thank the gentleman for his vote, for I was really beginning to think you had all forgotten that I am a candidate.

When the votes of the different counties were returned, it was found that Mr. Campbell, Philip Doddridge, Charles D. Morgan and Eugenius M. Wilson were elected to represent the district consisting of Ohio, Tyler, Brooke, Monongalia and Preston. After the meeting of the convention it was not long before the existing issues between the east and the west were brought forward.

On the proposition to apportion representation in the House of Delegates according to the white population and taxation, for which the east contended, and which on account of the tax on slaves would have had the effect of perpetuating the political power of the slaveholders, he delivered an able and eloquent speech. In this discussion he endeavored to establish four points:

1. That the principles on which such a proposition rested were unphilosophic and anti-republican.

2. That such a basis of representation was the common basis of aristocratical and monarchial governments.

3. That it could not be made palatable to a majority of the freeholders of Virginia; and,

4. That the white population basis would operate to the advantage of the whole State.

These propositions he illustrated in a logical and eloquent manner. Upon the subject of the right of suffrage he commented as follows: "While, sir," he said, "I am on the subject of such a state of nature or viewing man as coming into society, may I not take occasion to observe, that man exhibits himself as possessing the right of suffrage, anterior to his coming into the social compact. It is not a right derived from, or conferred by society; for it is a right which belongs to him as a man. Society may divest him of it, but they cannot confer it. But what is this right? It is that of thinking, willing and expressing his will. A vote is neither more nor less than the expression of a person's will. God has given to man the power of thinking, willing, and speaking, his will, and no man ever did as a free agent enter into any society without willing it. And we may add, no man could form a social compact without first exercising what we call the right of suffrage. It is a right *natural* and *underived* to the exercise of which every man by nature has as good a reason as another."

Again, in referring to an argument of Judge Upshur, he remarked: "This gentleman starts with the postulate that there are two sorts of majorities—numbers and interests; in plain English, men and money. I do not understand why he should not have added also majorities of talent, physical strength, scientific skill and general literature. These are all more valuable than money, and as useful to the State. A Robert Fulton, a General Jackson, a Joseph Lancaster, a Benjamin Franklin, is as useful to the State, as a whole district of mere slaveholders. Now all the logic, metaphysics and rhetoric of this assembly must be put in requisition to show why a citizen having a hundred negroes, should have ten times more political power than a Joseph Lancaster, or a Robert Fulton, with only a house and garden. And if scientific skill, physical strength, military prowess or general literature in some individuals is entitled to so much respect, why ought not these majorities in a community to have as much weight as mere wealth? We admit that fifty men in one district may have as much money as five hundred in another, but we can see no good reason why the superabundant wealth of those fifty should be an equivalent, or rather a counterpoise against four hundred and fifty citizens in another."

On the 18th of November, 1829, the question was on the adoption of the third resolution as reported from the legislative committee, which related to the right of suffrage and was as follows:

"*Resolved*, That the right of suffrage shall continue to be exercised by all who now enjoy it under the existing Constitution: Provided, that no person shall vote by virtue of its freehold only unless the same shall be assessed to the value of at least—$——, for the be extended first, to every free white male citizen of the Commonwealth resident therein above the age of twenty-one years who owns and has possessed for six months, or who has acquired by marriage, descent, or devise, a freehold estate, assessed to the value of not less than —— dollars for the payment of taxes, if such assessment shall be required by law: Second, or who shall own a vested estate in fee, in remainder, or reversion in land, the assessed value of which shall be —— dollars; third, or who shall owned or possessed a leasehold estate, with the evidence of title recorded of a term originally not less than five years, and one of which shall be unexpired of the annual value or rent of —— dollars; fourth, or who for twelve months next preceding has been a housekeeper or head of a family within the county, city, or borough, or election district wherein he may offer to vote, and who shall have been assessed with a part of the revenue of the Commonwealth within the preceding year and actually paid the same; Provided, nevertheless, that the right of suffrage shall not be exercised by any person of unsound mind, or who shall be a pauper or non-commissioned officer, soldier, sailor or marine, in the service of the United States, nor by any person convicted of any infamous offence, nor by citizens born without the Commonwealth, unless they shall have resided therein for five years immediately preceding the election at which they shall offer to vote, and two years preceding the said election in the county, city borough or election district where they shall offer to vote (the mode of proving such previous residence, when disputed, to be prescribed by law), and shall possess moreover, some one or more of the qualifications above enumerated."

To this Mr. Campbell offered the following amendment as a substitute:

1. "*Resolved*, That all persons now by law possessed of the right of suffrage have sufficient evidence of permanent common interest

with, and attachment to the community and have the right of suffrage.

2. *Resolved,* That all free white males of twenty-two years of age born within this Commonwealth and resident therein have sufficient evidence of permanent common interrest with, and attachment to the community, and have the right of suffrage.

3. *Resolved*, That every free white male, twenty-one years of age, a citizen of the United States, not included in the two preceding resolutions, who is now a resident, or who may hereafter become a resident within this Commonwealth, who is desirous of having the rights of a citizen in this Commonwealth shall in open Court in the county in which he resides, as may be prescribed by law, make a declaration of his intention to become a permanent resident in this State; and if such person shall twelve months after making such declaration, solemnly, promise to submit to, and support the Government of this Commonwealth, such person shall be considered as having permanent common interest with, and attachment to the community, and shall have the right of suffrage.

4. *Resolved,* That all persons except such as shall have rendered important services to their country; all persons of unsound mind, and all persons convicted of any high crime or misdemeanor against the Commonwealth, possessing whatever qualification they may, shall not be permitted to exercise the right of suffrage in this Commonwealth."

Mr. Campbell then addressed the Committee of the Whole in support of his proposed substitute, and among other of his remarks, said:

"Mr. Chairman, I have based the resolutions which I have had the honor to submit upon the doctrine contained in the 6th article of the Bill of Rights. And, sir permit me to say, that I am more attached to the Bill of Rights, than I was before the late discussion commenced. I have seen that this instrument has been our palladium, and the only bulwark against the demolition of our Republican citadel and the destruction of the Republican character of our Government. Nothing has now saved us from the establishment, the canonization of the most prominent features of an aristocracy, but this same Bill of Rights. Have not all the efforts of the gentle-anti-reformists been directed in some way or other against the letter of this instrument? Some have oppugned one way, and some

another. But all who have plead the mixed basis, and the freehold qualification, have found it in their way, and have made it in whole or in part a dead letter. Whether they intended it or not, such has been the effect of all their criticisms upon it. And, sir, give me leave to add, if these gentlemen had succeeded in their efforts, and at this time carried the *taxation basis* upon their constructions of the Bill of Rights, would it not be possible some fifty years hence upon more liberal construction, and with the precedent of these proceedings before another Convention to originate a legalized aristocracy in the fullest sense of the term? Yes, sir, if in the short period of *fifty-four* years, so great a departure from the principles developed and presented by the framers of the existing Constitution should have been completed as the basing of this Government on wealth, on wealth, on wealth, sir, I repeat, disguise it as gentlemen may, fifty-four years more, and another Convention following such examples, and such interpretations, and we would have an oligarchy in *propria forma* or by-law established nobility. Seeing the warfare which has been waged against this now more to me than ever dear instrument and seeing the barrier which it has thrown in the way of all encroachments upon our free institutions, I shall vote for its being perpetually a part of the fundamental law of our country."

But we might multiply extracts from his speeeches before that august body, all of which breathe the same devotion to the interests of the western portion of the State, and his ardent advocacy of the rights of his fellow-man, but those quoted are sufficient for the purpose to show that as a compeer and statesman he was the equal of any of his colleagues. The strenuous efforts put forth by Mr. Campbell to secure for the western portion of the State a recognition of such changes as would enure to its benefit and advantage were unsuccessful at the time, but did not altogether prove to have been in vain in the subsequent years, as they had a tendency to arouse the dormant energies of the people which finally culminated in success.

The debates showed that the majority in the eastern portion of the State was too great to be overcome. The eastern members of the Convention would listen or rather give heed to no appeals, nor any reason or argument which in the least would deprive them of their vantage ground of power. The Constitution when submitted retained all those provisions which were so obnoxious to the people of

the west and was adopted by the Convention by a majority of fourteen votes.

In concluding this paper it is due to the memory of Mr. Campbell to call attention to the fact that he was one among the earliest advocates of the public school system. In 1841 he rode on horseback from his home in Brooke county to Clarksburg, Harrison county, Virginia, to attend a Convention in the interests of common schools. His address there embodied our present system of free schools, and although delivered before that Convention over sixty odd years ago, it should be read by every school teacher in the State of West Virginia at this day, for certainly it is the strongest and clearest plea for common school education ever delivered in any State of the Union. It can be found in the "Popular Lectures and Addresses" of this gentleman.

Bethany College, of which he was the founder, was the crowning work of his life and is his proudest monument. In the autumn of 1841 it was regularly chartered, and at once became the educational centre of the Christian denomination and it soon took rank among the educational institutions of the country. The establishment of this college for the last twenty years of his life was the engrossing object of his attention. He was President of this institution for twenty-five years or until less than one year of his death, which occurred on March 4, 1866, at the age of seventy-eight years.

Finally, we remark, that as a husband he was affectionate and devoted; as a father, kind and tender: as a citizen, beloved and honored; and as a man, respected and admired; and of him it might be truly said:—

> His life was gentle, and the elements
> So mixed in him, that nature might stand up
> And say to all the world, THIS WAS A MAN.

ERRATA, IN JULY, 1902, NUMBER.

Some contributors use a typewriter; some attempt to use a pen; some of these do not write, and in our attempts to guess at theirs, we miss the mark. Our corrections may need correction. We give some that we think we know what was intended; we omit some.

On page 18, line 5, for fell read feel.
On page 35, line 14, for behavious read behaviour.
On page 40, line 9, for Lamphephs read Lamplugh.
On page 46, line 6, for Ansie read Annie.
On page 47, line 29, for Salteeds read Salkelds.
On page 48, line 10, for Neale read male.
On page 49, line 5, for Nurnerry read Nunnery.
On page 49, line 20, for Old read Colonel James, &c.
On page 49, line 33, for Rocker read Rooker.

4276 4